

REVISED
with 200 new pages!

BOSTON'S GUN BIBLE

3



Boston T. Party

**BOSTON'S
GUN
BIBLE**

by

Boston T. Party

Published by

JAVELIN PRESS

(Without any 4 USC §§ 105-110 "Federal area" or "State.")

www.javelinpress.com

***Boston's Gun Bible* by Boston T. Party
Common Law Copyright 1997-2015 by Javelin Press.**

With explicit reservation of all Common Law Rights without prejudice.

"Boston T. Party" is a Common Law Trademark of Javelin Press.

Sold for academic study and informational purposes only.

Read the following disclaimer very carefully and thoroughly!

Firearms are potentially dangerous and must be handled responsibly by individual trainees and shooters alike. The technical information presented herein on firearms use and alteration, ammunition handloading and loading, training, and shooting inevitably reflects the Author's beliefs and experience with particular firearms and training techniques under specific circumstances that the reader (hereafter "You") cannot duplicate exactly. This book is not intended to serve as a replacement for professional gunsmithing by or instruction under experienced, competent, qualified personnel. All information herein is presumed accurate, though typos may persist.

All the loads listed in this book were safe in the particular firearms that they were tried with the unique lot of components that were used and under unique conditions that existed at the exact instant they were fired. Every load must be carefully and systematically worked up by the shooter using his or her own firearm. The Author, Publisher, and anybody else connected with this book (hereafter "We") disclaim ALL liability for your handloads and firearms handling.

Some of the products (or combination thereof) discussed in this book may not currently (or in the future) be legal for possession, sale, or interstate transportation in certain jurisdictions. Therefore, You have the responsibility to consult with local law enforcement. We do not encourage or endorse You to break any laws or experiment with any activities of a criminal nature.

This book's information is presented *for academic study only* and should be approached with great caution. **We disclaim ALL liability, injuries, or damages from the use or misuse, directly or indirectly, of any information herein.**

No part of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, or yet to be invented, including, but not limited to, photocopying, recording, or by any information storage and retrieval system, without express written permission from the Publisher.

The sole exception to this Copyright limitation is the privilege, hereby granted by the Publisher, to incorporate brief quotations of no more than 1,000 words in critical articles, so long as these two conditions are met: 1) A copy of the work in which *Boston's Gun Bible* is quoted is sent to the Publisher within 30 days of its publication, and 2) The following reference is given (in at least eight point type) at the bottom of the first page in which said privileged quotation begins:

From *Boston's Gun Bible* by Boston T. Party (Common Law Copyright 1997-2015, Javelin Press. www.javelinpress.com).

Sale of this book without a front cover may be unauthorized. If stripped, it may have been reported to the Publisher as "*unsold or destroyed*" and neither the Author nor the Publisher may have received payment for it.

Boston on Guns & Courage: March, 1998
Boston's Gun Bible: August, 2000
Boston's Gun Bible (revised): April, 2002

Printed in the united states of America, without any 4 USC §§ 105-110 "*Federal area*"
or "*State.*"

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1 / 07 06 05 04 03 02 01 00

Library of Congress Catalog Number 00-091704
ISBN 1-888766-06-9

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

Huge appreciation goes to my proofreaders and editors (voluntary and not). You know who you are. Douglas P. Bell in particular was a huge help, and often went above and beyond the call of duty!

I am grateful to Tim Mullin, Esq. for his gracious Foreword, and for his generous help in answering questions.

Much of the revised *Boston's Gun Bible* is indirectly due to Fred of Fred's M14 Military Stocks, who kept after me to give the M14/M1A a fairer shake against the FAL. (I did so, and Chapter 10 explains my results.) I also thank Fred for proofing the battle rifle chapters. He found several things that I'd overlooked.

DEDICATION

To the Massachusetts Militia Captain John Parker, and to his present and future successors.

To the "Serial Lecher" Bill Clinton and Hillary, without whom this book would not have been possible, or necessary.

Finally, to Bill and Hillary's pal, Vince Foster, who might be alive today if he'd only had a gun on 20 July 1993.

What our readers have to say...

*This is an excellent reference book. Boston's conclusions are well-founded. The technical detail is fantastic. I HIGHLY recommend this book. It is an outgrowth of his earlier book "Boston on Guns & Courage." This new tome is huge [at 800+ pages]. At Z28 it isn't cheap, but with useful information like this, **it is worth every penny**. There is a lot of wisdom packed between the covers!*

– James Wesley, Rawles – author of *Patriots*

*Being female, I particularly liked the chapter [6] Women and Guns. Great information for women who have decided to be armed, but need to be informed first. **Written in an entertaining and captivating style, you can't go wrong with this great book.***

– Dianna, Colorado

***This was my first "Boston" book and worth every penny.** I am rushing right out to order some of his other titles.*

*I found this book very helpful in that I had yet to select a specific home defense weapon and had not really figured out what to get in which order. Reading Boston's book was like getting advice from a knowledgeable friend or relative; **I can't describe how much I like his writing style.***

– Joel, Texas

"Boston's Gun Bible" is, without a doubt, the very best book on firearms ever published.** It is what a gun book SHOULD be: practical, honest, comprehensive, logical, intelligent, up-to-date, witty, accurate, and downright ENJOYABLE to read. (I swear I could NOT put it down for three days straight.) Jam-packed full of insightful information and analysis, this is an absolute "must have" for novices and professionals alike. **...every subject is presented with the honesty and intelligence that only Boston can deliver.

– Michael, Ohio

*If you are already a "gun nut" you will be entertained and enlightened. If you are not a "gun nut", you may just be converted by the time you finish this book. **Must reading for anyone with a serious interest in guns or self-protection.***

– a reader from Dallas

*I'm a book dealer at gun shows here in Texas, and "Boston's Gun Bible" has been our most popular title... **Where else can you buy such knowledge?***

– Drock, Texas

***If you are going to own only one book on guns, this is it.** You might as well go ahead and order two copies, because when you read it you're going to want to share it with a friend...*

– Jeb, Colorado

**Titles by
Kenneth W. Royce
(a.k.a. Boston T. Party)**



Modules for Manhood 2

(2015 Volume 2 of 3)

Modules for Manhood

(2014 Volume 1 of 3)

Hologram of Liberty

(2012 second edition)

One Nation, Under Surveillance

You & The Police!

(2009 edition)

Safari Dreams

Molôn Labé!

Boston's Gun Bible

(2002 edition, revised 2003-2009)

Boston's Gun Bible

(2000 edition)

Boston on Surviving Y2K

Boston on Guns & Courage

Hologram of Liberty

(1997 first edition)

Bulletproof Privacy

You & The Police!

(1996 first edition)

Good-Bye April 15th!

TABLE OF CONTENTS

[Foreword by Timothy J. Mullin](#)

[Preface](#)

PART I: THE BASICS

1 Terminology

2 Safety & Handling

THE FOUR BASIC SAFETY RULES

GUN SAFETY AND CHILDREN

CONDITION OF WEAPON

RANGE COMMANDS

 System check

 Loading

 Unloading

 Clearing malfunctions

SAFETY ONCA FANTASTIC TEACHING CD

3 Self-Defense & The Law

WHEN & WHY TO SHOOT

When to shoot

Why to shoot

YOU CANNOT SHOOT...

 to defend property

 when there is *no* threat of GBH or death

 when you're being verbally abused

 to stop a fleeing, unarmed criminal

WHEN IT'S *INADVISABLE* TO SHOOT

YOUR LIABILITY

Prepare your financial and asset structure

4 Tactics & Training

Why listen to *me*?

THE THREE KINDS OF PEOPLE

THE WARRIOR SPIRIT

At some point in our lives, we *all* must fight

All fights have their own distance

YOUR THREAT

Target indicators

LEVELS OF ALERTNESS

The Gift of Fear

Survival signals relating to new people

If suddenly and inexplicably fearful *Trust it!*

The Gift of Fear is a very gunphobic book

WEAPON RELIABILITY

TACTICS CAN OVERVIEW

The "Survival Chain"

The Force Continuum

M & M & M

Dogma vs. Dogma

DEFENDING YOUR HOME

The three most likely scenarios

Securing the perimeter

Early warning systems

Home preparation

Home guns and gear

Home tactics

DEFENSIVE SHOOTING

The Combat Triad

Weapon retention

Keep your gun hand free!

The "Tachy-Pysche" Effect

Shot placement is better than caliber

Front sight! Press! Front sight!

Plan "A" Response
Cshots to the torso

- Plan "B" ResponseCthe headshot
- Plan "C" ResponseCshots to the pelvis, A, B
- Reloading your gun during a fight
- Tactics in low-light conditions
- Transitioning from primary to secondary gun
- Clearing a building
- Taking prisoners

IN YOUR CAR

- Keep your car perfectly maintained!
- Have certain things in your car
- Be appropriately armed
- Stay in Condition Yellow
- Watch your ingress and egress
- Always think tactically
- Always maintain an "out"
- Write down license plate numbers often
- If you think you're being followed...
- If a fender-bender or traffic stop feels hinky
- Don't be afraid to be bold
- Passengers should be on the floor, or firing
- As long as your car is mobile, stay in it
- Your *car* can be replacedCyou *cannot* be

TEAM TACTICS

- Advantages of a two-man team
- Communication

TRAINING

- Gun schoolC"*learning, then forgetting*"
- Training books and videos

PRACTICE

ONE-HANDED SHOOTING

- Position of holster
- Strong hand
- Weak hand

- Equipment recommendations for one-handed

11 APRIL 1985 "MIAMI MASSACRE"

- Lessons learned from "Miami Massacre"

FINAL CHAPTER THOUGHTS

5 After The Smoke Clears...

Stay or flee?

"I'M OUTTA HERE!"

Whether or not to remain

Cold gun preparation

Disposing of a cold carry gun

If all this seems overwhelming, you're right!

STAY AND DIAL 911

6 Women & Guns

HANDGUNS

Semi-autos

Revolvers

How to daily carry your handgun

Handgun practice ammo

Handgun defensive ammo

Training with your handgun

Practicing with your handgun

SHOTGUNS

RIFLES

Defensive rifles

Hunting rifles

DEFENSIVE TACTICSCBRIEFLY

Get *ugly* with the rapist!

LADIES' RESOURCES

PART II: BATTLE RIFLES

7 Combat Rifle History

19th CENTURY DEVELOPMENT

BOLT-ACTION MILITARY

Lee-Enfield No.4 Mk. I and II

Krag-Jorgensen

Mosin-Nagant M91/30

Mauser M1888, 1889, 1890, and 1891

Mauser Models 93 and 95
Swedish Mauser M94, M96, M38, M41
Steyr M95
Mauser 98
Springfield 03A3
Schmidt-Rubin M1911, K31
P17 Enfield
MAS36/51
Arisaka Type 38 and 99
Madsen M47

Final comments on these old bolt-actions

EARLY SEMI-AUTO BATTLE RIFLES

SURPLUS SEMI-AUTO MBRs

M1 Garand
Tokarev SVT40
AG42B Ljungman
Walther G43
Simonov SKS
FN49
MAS49/56
vz52
SIG SG57
Hakim
Dragunov

RISE OF THE BATTLE CARBINE

M1 Carbine
MP43/MP44/StG44

THE FUTURE

8 Modern Combat Semi-Auto Rifles

WHAT ABOUT FULL-AUTOS?

COMBAT RIFLE CRITERIA

FLAWLESS FUNCTIONING

DELIVER HIGH-ENERGY BULLETS

ACCURACY

ERGONOMICS, RELOADING

FIELD-STRIPPING

MARKSMANSHIP
FEATURES & SPECIFICATIONS

9 Combat Rifle Cartridges

WHAT ABOUT THE 7.62x39?

Battle carbines in 7.62x39

WHAT ABOUT THE 5.45x39?

.223 OR NOT .223?

.223 conclusion

.223 vs. .308

.308CThe *winner!*

10 Rating the Battle Rifles

RELIABILITY

Op System

Design Ruggedness

USABILITY

Static Handling

Controls

COMBAT ACCURACY

Sights

Accuracy Miscellaneous

AFFORDABILITY

BATTLE RIFLE RANKING

Reliability

Usability

Combat Accuracy

Affordability

Overall Score

Why the M14 won

ANOTHER WAY TO COMPARE

Why did it take me so long to pick the M1A?

Final comments on your .308 battle rifle

SOME RIFLEMAN PARTING WORDS

11 M1 Garand & M14 (M1A)

M1/M14 RELIABILITY

- M1/M14 Op System
- M1/M14 Design Ruggedness
- M1/M14 USABILITY
 - M1/M14 Static Handling
 - M1/M14 Controls
- M1/M14 COMBAT ACCURACY
 - M1/M14 Sights
 - M1/M14 Accuracy Miscellaneous
- M1/M14 AFFORDABILITY
- BATTLE RIFLE RANKING
 - Reliability
 - Usability
 - Combat Accuracy
 - Affordability
 - Overall Score
 - Why did it take me so long to pick the M1A?
- THE M1 GARAND (1936-1957)
 - WWII M1s versus Korean-era M1s
 - Good M1s
 - Less-than-good M1s
 - Inspecting the seller's M1
 - Shooting your M1 Garand
 - How to adjust the M1/M14 rear sight
 - Cleaning your M1
 - Accurizing your M1 Garand
 - M1 Garand modifications
 - M1 accessories
 - M1 parts/tools
 - Building an M1 Garand library
- THE M14 (1957-1963) & M1A^J
 - Forged receivers
 - Investment cast receivers
 - Inspecting the seller's M14/M1A
 - Shooting the M14/M1A
 - M14 modifications
 - M14 accessories
 - M14 parts/tools

M14 library

12 FAL / L1A1

METRIC vs. INCH FALs

FAL RELIABILITY

FAL Op System

FAL Design Ruggedness

FAL USABILITY

FAL Static Handling

FAL Controls

FAL COMBAT ACCURACY

FAL Sights

FAL Accuracy Miscellaneous

FAL AFFORDABILITY

FAL BATTLE RIFLE RANKING

THE FAL

Which FAL for me?

FAL MODS, PARTS, & TOOLS

13 HK91

HK91 RELIABILITY

HK91 Op System

HK91 Design Ruggedness

HK91 USABILITY

HK91 Static Handling

HK91 Controls

HK91 COMBAT ACCURACY

HK91 Sights

HK91 Accuracy Miscellaneous

HK91 AFFORDABILITY

HK91 BATTLE RIFLE RANKING

THE HK91

Choosing your HK91

HK91 MODS, PARTS, & TOOLS

14 AR10

15 Rating the Battle Carbines

16 AR15

AR15 RELIABILITY

AR15 Op System

AR15 Design Ruggedness

AR15 USABILITY

AR15 Static Handling

AR15 Controls

AR15 COMBAT ACCURACY

AR15 Sights

AR15 Accuracy Miscellaneous

AR15 AFFORDABILITY

AR15 BATTLE RIFLE RANKING

Final comments on the AR15

AR15 MANUFACTURERS

AR15 COMPONENTS

.223 AMMO

CLEANING

17 AK74

RELIABILITY

Op System

Design Ruggedness

USABILITY

COMBAT ACCURACY

AFFORDABILITY

BATTLE RIFLE RANKING

AK47

History of development

AK military variants

YOUR AK

AK74 MODS, PARTS, & TOOLS

18 Combat Rifle Optics

A word about "bargains"

DIFFERENT OPTICS FOR DIFFERENT RIFLES RANGEFINDING & BDC

Rangefinding

Ballistic Drop Compensator (BDC)

RF and BDC together

BATTLE RIFLE OPTICS

Trijicon ACOG

Elcan 7.62

I.O.R. 4x24mm M2 7.62

Hensoldt Optische Werke 4x24mm

Shepherd P2

L2A2 SUIT

Comparing battle rifle scopes

BATTLE CARBINE OPTICS

Trijicon ACOG

I.O.R. 4x24mm M2 .223

Leupold Mark 4 CQT

U.S. Optics SN-12

Two inexpensive alternatives...

RED DOT OPTICS

Aimpoint Comp M2 XD

TACTICAL RIFLE OPTICS

I.O.R. 2.5-10x-42mm MP-8 reticle

Leupold Mark 4 M3-10x40mm

Shepherd P2

Tactical rifle optics specs and features

RINGS & MOUNTS

SCOPES & ACCESSORIES

HOW TO MOUNT OPTICS

Battle rifle optics specs and features

Battle carbine optics specs and features

19 How To Become A Rifleman

"I'd love to hear your backup plan!"

WHY MUST WE ALL BE RIFLEMEN

At the rifle range

In the field

FINAL THOUGHTS
ARMY QUALIFICATION TARGETS

PART III: ALL OTHER GUNS

20 Shotguns

21 Bolt-Action Rifle Cartridges

BEST GENERAL CARTRIDGES

.223 .22-250 .220 Swift
.243 6mm Rem. .250 Savage .257 Roberts
.260 Rem. 6.5x55 Swede 7x57 7-08
.284 .270 .280
.303 British .308 .30-06 8x57
.260, .270, 7-08, .284, .280, .308, or .30-06?
.308 or .30-06?
.30-06 pros and cons vs. the .308
.308 pros and cons vs. the .30-06
.308 commonality between bolt and MBRs
So, what's the answer? .308 or .30-06?
Other good bolt-gun cartridges

A SECOND OPINION

22 Bolt-Action Rifles

RIFLES

Sako (pronounced "sock-o")
Savage 110
Ruger M77II
Winchester 70
Remington 700BDL
Browning A-Bolt II with BOSS
If on a *really* tight budget
In summary
Choosing your level of accuracy
GENERAL-PURPOSE RIFLES TO 400yds

Affordable, decent performance
Level 1
The Jeff Cooper Scout rifle
OUT TO 700yds
Spending Ø1,200-1,500 for a Level 2 rifle
Dropping Ø2,000+ and doing it right
Level 3
700-1000yds
Level 4
1000-1500yds
Level 5
The long-range .338 cartridges
CLOSING COMMENTS
The man behind the rifle

23 .50BMG Target Rifles

1500+yds
Level 6, the .50BMG
THE .50BMG (12.7X99) CARTRIDGE
A word about tracers
Current U.S. military .50BMG rounds
Mk 211, Mod 0 (green tip) Raufoss
Handloading for the .50BMG
SHOOTING THE .50BMG
Support gear
.50BMG TARGET RIFLES

24 Other Rifles

.22LRs
SPEED & ACCURACY OF ACTIONS
SPORTING AUTOS
SPORTING PUMPS
LEVER-ACTIONS
Winchester or Marlin?
Other lever-actions
SINGLE-SHOT RIFLES
RIFLES IN PISTOL CARTRIDGES
RIFLES FOR ROUTINE TRAVEL
Rifles for airplane trips
Rifles for car trips
RIFLE / SHOTGUN COMBINATIONS
BLACKPOWDER GUNS

Muzzleloaders
AIR RIFLES

25 Handguns

SEMI-AUTOS

Semi-autos vs. Revolvers

Which semi-auto cartridge?

So, which *is* it? C.40S&W, 10mm, or .45ACP?

Handgun practice ammo

Handgun defensive ammo

Single-action, double-action, or Glock?

GLOCK

Shooting the Glock

Which Glock for *you*?

compact (G27 or G23/.40S&W), (G30/.45ACP)

full size duty (G23/.40S&W) (G20/10mm) (G21 or G30/.45)

Customizing your Glock

MISCELLANEOUS SEMI-AUTOS

Bargain autos

Semi-autos to *avoid*

Collectible pistols (*circa* WWI, 1920-30s, WWII)

REVOLVERS

Cartridges

Snub nose (.38Sp., .357, .44 Sp., .45ACP)

Revolver C Magnum (.357 or .44 Magnums)

Bargain revolvers

Revolvers to *avoid*

.22LR PISTOLS

AutoC full size .22LR

Auto C compact .22LR

HOLSTERS & CARRY GEAR

have a sturdy belt!

belt holsters and mag pouches

concealment gear

CARRY MULTIPLE HANDGUNS!

Carrying *two* handguns

Carrying a *third* handgun

Carrying a *fourth* handgun (*i.e.*, the hideout)
SIGHTS

PART IV: ACQUISITION

26 My Shopping List

SO, *WHAT* GUNS SHOULD I HAVE?

Urbanites

Rural folks

Your handguns

Your shotgun

Your rifles

THINGS TO BUY *NOW!*

Stuff you wear

Stuff you carry

Cache tubes

GUN SAFES

burglary certification

fire certification

gun safe sources

NIGHT VISION DEVICES

KNIVES

MISCELLANEOUS WEAPONRY

How to Buy Body Armor
An Informed Buyer's Guide

27 You & The BATF

DEALING WITH THE POST-BAN BLUES

If the rifle (*i.e.*, receiver) was imported,

If the rifle (*i.e.*, receiver) was made in U.S.A.,

Foreign semi-auto/detachable mag rifles

Domestic semi-auto/detachable mag rifles

The 1994 "*Crime Bill*" and you

Post-ban FALs

Post-ban H&Ks

Post-ban AR15s

Special note on Kalifornia
ILLEGAL POST/PRE-BAN HYBRIDS
I do not recommend illegal hybrids!
Final comments
PRE-1899 GUNS
"Curios or Relics"
HOW THE BATF OPERATES
DO NOT BUY/SELL OUT-OF-STATE
If questioned for transacting out-of-state
AVOID ENTRAPMENT
BUSTING THE SELLER
BUSTING THE BUYER
BUSTING THE OWNER
IF EVER QUESTIONED
Ascertain his identity. Don't cower!
What's the relationship? Arrest? Detention?
If detained, repeatedly ask if you're free to go
Once free to go, don't hang around
IF ARRESTED, EXPLAIN *NOTHING!*
Control your attitude! Stay calm and alert!
Beware of tricks!
Ownership vs. *"possessory interest"*
Legal defenses against a pre/post hybrid bust
Know a good gun-rights lawyer
FORM 4473

28 How To Buy, Sell, & Trade

THE PRIVATE SALE MARKET IS DRYING UP!
RULES FOR BUYING
After you've bought the gun
RULES FOR SELLING
Deciding on whether to sell a favorite gun
NEWSPAPER ADS
FLEA MARKETS
Is all this "paranoid?"
GUN SHOWS
Get there *early*

Go *both* days
Get your own table
Late Sunday often has the best deals
How to scour a show
Gun show etiquette
INSPECTING THE GOODS
Inspect carefully!
Ask questions!
ON TRADING
HAGGLING
As a cash buyer
As a seller
KEEP AND BEAR ARMS *PRIVATELY*
Gossips and snitches
Customer lists

29 Reloading, Zeroing, Shooting, Cleaning, & Caching

HANDLOADING
AMMO
ZEROING
Battle rifles
Scoped rifles
SHOOTING
Eye protection
Ear protection
Boston's target notation system
CLEANING
MISCELLANEOUS
Spare parts
Coating and finishes
CACHING

PART V: DISARMAMENT

30 Federal "Gun Controls"

NATIONAL FIREARMS ACT of 1934

GUN CONTROL ACT of 1968

18 USC §922(d) "prohibited possessors"

THE "BRADY BILL"

"GUN-FREE SCHOOL ZONES"

The "Self-defense Free Zones"

LAWS ON "ASSAULT WEAPONS"

HISTORY OF THE 2nd AMENDMENT

IS THE 2nd AMENDMENT AN INDIVIDUAL OR COLLECTIVE RIGHT?

Heller and the *National Firearms Act* of 1934

Heller and the *Gun Control Act* of 1968

final thoughts about gun court cases

Boston sez: Hold off on the party balloons

SO, WHAT RIGHTS ARE LEFT?

GUNS & 9/11: THE LESSON

[31 Politically Corrected Glossary \(by Alan Korwin\)](#)

[32 Letter to a Columbine Student](#)

[Christians, self-defense, and guns](#)

[Good Guys and Bad Guys](#)

["Hear the other side."](#)

["reasonable gun legislation"](#)

[Buzzwords and catchphrases](#)

[Professional victim disarmament advocates](#)

[Australia's victim disarmament](#)

[England's victim disarmament](#)

[The slippery slope of regulations and controls](#)

[The unreasonableness of waiting periods](#)

[The unreasonableness of mag restrictions](#)

[Licensing & registration are unreasonable](#)

[Raising the age from 18 to 21 is unreasonable](#)

[Forbidding private gun sales is unreasonable](#)

"70 of Americans support reasonable gun laws"

Gun violence and children

THE RISK OF MORE GUN CONTROL

33 The Real Goal of "Gun Control"

"Civil society" means sheep ruled by wolves

34 Gun Laws in the 50 States & D.C.

The McClure-Volkmer Act of 1986

RANKING THE STATES & D.C.

My scoring differed from the Kappas Guide

BOSTON T. PARTY'S RANKING

The "Top 10" Losers

CANADA

MEXICO

WHAT ABOUT OTHER COUNTRIES?

CONCLUSION

35 Creeping Citizen Disarmament

Repealing the 2nd Amendment

A national ban and confiscation

One possible disarmament timetable

MANDATORY REGISTRATION

WATCH YOUR TONGUE!

BANNING GUNS, AMMO, & GEAR

semi-auto "assault weapons"

"high-capacity" (i.e., normal capacity) mags

.50BMG rifles and ammo

"armor piercing" ammo

military rifle ammo

detachable mag semi-auto rifles

shotgun slugs & slug barrels

"sniper ammo"

"sniper rifles"

semi-auto handguns

semi-auto centerfire long guns

bulletproof vests

[night vision devices](#)
[laser sights](#)
[pre-1899 guns](#)
[reloading components](#)
[centerfire handguns](#)
[centerfire rifles](#)
[.22LR handguns](#)
[shotguns](#)
[everything else](#)

[REGULATING ACTIVITIES](#)

[Eliminate gun show private sales](#)
[Quantity limitation on dealer purchases](#)
[Outlawing privately-sold handguns](#)
[Outlawing private sales of *all* guns](#)
[Further reduce the number of FFLs](#)
[Hound domestic gun makers out of business](#)
[*Gun-Free School Zone* enforcement](#)
[Restrict or abolish the "*licensed collectors*"](#)
[No purchase of gun stuff without Card](#)
[Mandatory "*arsenal*" license and inspection](#)
[Severe regulation/closure of gun ranges](#)
[Federal law banning the carrying of firearms](#)

[THE MANIA FOR "SMART GUNS"](#)

[My philosophical objections](#)
[My technological objections](#)

[DOWN THE SLIPPERY U.K. SLOPE](#)

[Separating future generations from guns](#)
[Britain becomes totalitarian](#)
[Failure of British gun control & prohibition](#)
[The "*sporting purpose*" trap](#)
[British gun prohibition in 2000 and beyond](#)
[Continued appeasement?](#)
[Towards Closer Analysis of Slippery Slopes](#)

[FINE SUPREME COURT RULINGS](#)

[**36 Coercive Buy-up Programs**](#)

[Second Amendment challenge](#)

Fifth Amendment challenge

"We can't afford it!"

If a coercive buy-up goes through

Who would give up their guns?

The wildcards

Are you a man or a mouse?

37 Why I Will Not Obey California's Gun Registration Edict (by Brian Puckett)

A BRIEF SUMMARY OF THE SITUATION

TWO QUESTIONS TO ANSWER

WHAT IS THE BILL OF RIGHTS?

THE PURPOSE AND MEANING OF THE 2nd?

TO MEAN ANYTHING, RIGHTS MUST INCLUDE

ASSOCIATED NECESSITIES

WHICH ARMS ARE PROTECTED BY THE SECOND
AMENDMENT?

REGISTRATION IS INCOMPATIBLE WITH RIGHTS

REGISTRATION IS MORE THAN AN INFRINGEMENT

RIGHT VERSUS PRIVILEGE

APPLYING THESE CONCEPTS TO CALIFORNIA'S EDICT

SUMMARY

RELATED ISSUES

REGISTRATION YOUR DECISION AFFECTS ALL RIGHTS

DEMANDING OR COMPLYING WITH REGISTRATION IS

BETRAYAL

A PERSONAL POSITION

SEIZE THIS OPPORTUNITY

38 Confiscation

Asking soldiers if they'll fire on gunowners

THE STATES' RESOLVE GROWS

Vermont

Arizona

GUN CONFISCATION ABROAD

England

Australia

New Zealand

Canada

UN GUN-CONTROL

WHEN THEY COME FOR YOUR GUN

39 When The Raids Come

What To Do If The Police Come To Confiscate Weapons

Dear Peace Officer:

STAY COOL, FOLKS!

PART VI: COURAGE

40 Wealth vs. Liberty

HAVING WEALTH AND FREEDOM

Long-term *liberty*, not comfort, is the goal

Wealth is *expendable*

Wealth is not an end, but a *means* for Liberty.

Maintain income. Lower your living standard.

Fractionalize your assets

Have 2x50%, or 3x33% not 1x100%

Now, get *rugged*

41 Preparing for the Worst

DON'T GET SKITTISH!

The final, simple human truth

42 Patriot *Light!*

A third less courage than the regular Patriot!

The spineless sellout "conservatives"

43 Outrage, Then Courage

A 2nd AMERICAN REVOLUTION?

44 Boston Is *Nuts!*

45 Sources

46 Excerpts from *Molon Labe!*, an upcoming novel by Boston T. Party

FOREWORD

by Timothy J. Mullin

In 1942, when the threat of invasion from Nazi and Japanese forces seemed very real, Charles Haven and Melvin Johnson, Jr. wrote the delightful little book, *A Comprehensive Small Arms Manual*. In that volume, the authors detailed a wide variety of weapons suitable for the defense-minded citizen of the period. They tested and evaluated these weapons and commented on their usefulness in opposing the designs of foreign socialists and imperialists.

Boston T. Party, in his *Boston's Gun Bible*, has done the same thing for patriots in the first decade of the 21st Century. Of course, that threat persists today because the same foreign ideology is alive and well in Washington, D.C. and other power centers. How best to oppose these insidious forces which destroy our freedoms and traditional way of life?

Money and Time are both precious things to all of us. Boston T. Party has given us a gift of them both by evaluating a long list of weapons so that we do not have to ourselves. Even more critically, he has given us an approach to our dilemma (and an attitude to emulate) to assist us in developing the proper mindset and life-style so essential in a free society.

I have great hope that six decades from now, someone will be reading *Boston's Gun Bible*, much like we today read Haven and Johnson, with a little smirk on our faces about how unnecessary it all was since the invaders never had the nerve – that repugnant philosophies had been eradicated and are now studied in laboratories like the conquered virus of smallpox.

Similarly (and with a lot of luck), we will look back and shake our heads at the notion that any American government agent ever attempted to restrain the free exercise of our constitutional liberties, and that there was ever a time when free-born Americans had

anything to fear from their government, federal or State. Hopefully in those years ahead, the freedom-destroyers within certain bureaus and agencies will be viewed as we today view the *Gestapo* thug, the SS executioner, and the maniacal Jap soldier – with a mixture of contempt and amazement that free people ever cowered before such vermin.

Conversely, if the worst ever does occur, we will be ready to at last put what we have learned from *Boston's Gun Bible* to its intended purpose – just like our fathers and grandfathers did who read *A Comprehensive Small Arms Manual* some 60 years ago. Boston's book is precisely the type of work that gives the liberty-haters their nightmares. Make no mistake: Any of you readers who take this book to heart are dangerous to tyranny. *You* will have the proper tools and resolve to assert your liberty. As it said, "*Armed men are citizens; disarmed men are subjects.*"

Free men need rifles and courage. In this book, you will learn how and where to find them both.

Timothy J. Mullin
April 2000

A former U.S. Marshal, Mullin is the author of *Training The Gunfighter*, *Testing the War Weapons*, and several other gun books, most of which are available from Paladin Press. Mullin also collaborated in and wrote the Foreword to *Unintended Consequences* by John Ross. They are currently working on the sequel.

PREFACE

Arms are the only true badges of liberty. The possession of arms is the distinction of a free man from a slave.

– Andrew Fletcher, *A Discourse of Government with relation to Militias* (1698), p. 47

My puny philosophical opponents will pigeonhole me as a "gun nut." True, I enjoy owning and shooting guns, and am an unabashed enthusiast – however, guns are more a means than an end. I am a "freedom nut" and guns – with the responsibility, training, and will to properly use them –are "*liberty's teeth*" (George Washington).

This book is not about hunting. There are already plenty of good hunting books, and yet another one is not direly needed right now. The 2nd Amendment is not *really* about hunting – it is about keeping politicians nervous, honest *servants*. An armed citizenry is the *ultimate* "check and balance" on government. When the ballot box and the jury box no longer work, then it's probably nearing time for the cartridge box.

I can't speak for other nations, but *Americans* merely collectively *delegate* their individual sovereignties to servant government on their *behalf*. When the servant grows haughty it should get corrected or fired. Since, however, the Constitution set up an *insular* arrangement of political correction (only congressmen can impeach and try congressmen), and since voting out the congressional servants has proven to be nearly worthless, concerned citizens are contemplating sterner measures. We should no longer "*spare the rod and spoil the child.*"

It's only because congressmen are *not* in fear of their jobs, their fortunes, or their lives that they have the *nerve* to propose repealing the 2nd Amendment, classifying vitamins as prescription drugs, or banning wood-burning stoves. Such D.C. ilk should have been dragged down the streets back in 1933 when they outlawed the private ownership of gold –which they blamed for the Depression!

The thugs who enforced such obscenity should have been strung up from the first day. Since they weren't, they *now* feel free to stomp family pets to death, shoot nursing mothers in the face, and pour helicopter gunfire through the roofs of homestead churches *with women, children, and babies inside*.

Men that are above all fear, soon grow above all shame.

– Trenchard and Gordon, *Cato's Letters* (1755), vol. I, p. 255

Our government, now fearless, has grown above all shame. We *could* have easily pulled these weeds when they first sprouted. *Now* they've got Kevlar vests, night vision devices, and silenced submachineguns. The *National Firearms Act of 1934* was our Reichstag fire, and we acquiesced. The *Gun Control Act of 1968* was our 1936 Rhineland. The "Brady" bill was the March 1938 Austrian *Anschluss*, the "*Crime Bill*" the October 1938 Sudetenland annexation, and the "Terror" bill March 1939 Czechoslovakia. (Gun registration will be 1939 Poland.)

Now we're probably going to have to fight "WWII." And we're not *ready*. (Thankfully, neither are *they*.) Oh, we've got the *guns* – we just don't have the courage. We are nearly perfectly gelded. Never before has such a well-armed people become so utterly apathetic to the preservation of their liberties, so lazy in their thinking, and so cowardly in their actions.

Our domestic Hitlerite gunphobes have called our bluff too many times, and have grown too confident with their progress. A slap in their faces back in 1968 would have saved us incalculable bloodshed a generation later. If there is not a John Ross *Unintended Consequences* scenario *very soon*, then we're in for some extremely nasty business – Civil War 2.

I don't desire this, but if it's inevitable, then let it come. "*Is life so dear, or peace so sweet as to be purchased at the price of chains or slavery?*" No, it's not. It never *was*. **We have the *badges of liberty*, but not the *soul*. We're serfs with guns.** This unprecedented paradox *will* be resolved in one of only two ways: We'll either lose our serfdom, or we'll lose our guns.

If you *won't* fight for your Liberty, then sell your guns to us *now* before they're coercively purchased or confiscated.

Or, read on.

Boston's Gun Bible is about regaining the soul and polishing the badges.

MY GOAL WITH THIS BOOK

Boston's Gun Bible is not the definitive guide to *all* firearms matters. Many subjects worthy of complete books (e.g, ballistics, CQB tactics, shooting techniques, optics, countersniping, etc.) are only briefly covered, else this would have been a 1,000 page book not seen before the next round of victim disarmament. We don't have that kind of time, and besides, excellent information on those subjects already exists.

My primary goal was to dispel many potentially dangerous gun misconceptions, and illustrate what you perhaps *don't* know. My secondary goal was to compose the single most useful gun encyclopedia for the modern gunowner, and by nearly all accounts I've succeeded. There's little missing from here that you really need to know.

I've eclectically collected (and rejected) bits from all the Masters. Thus, some of this book is just plain personal opinion and bias. Since guns are *personal* items, bias is to be expected. While I do admit to several gun biases, my reasons for such are clearly explained. Although I'm quite the "Glockaholic" (Glocks work, *period*), if the 1911 or SIG or USP "resonate" better with *you*, then by all means use one of those excellent pistols.

Boston's Gun Bible is a catalog of one civilian's experience and opinions. I don't know everything, but I think you'll get your money's worth. I hope you will find this book a timely, useful, and informative work which stands out above the swill proffered by the misinformed to the ignorant.

What's new in revised *Boston's Gun Bible*?

Totally new chapters added in 2002 were:

10 Rating the Battle Rifles

- 11 M1/M14 (M1A)
- 12 FAL
- 13 HK91
- 15 Rating the Battle Carbines
- 17 AK74
- 18 Combat Rifle Optics
- 19 How To Become A Rifleman
- 29 Reloading, Zeroing, Shooting, Cleaning, & Caching
- 46 excerpts from Boston's novel, *Molôn Labé!***

These chapters from 2000 have much new/revised material:

- 1 Terminology
- 4 Tactics & Training
- 23 .50BMG Target Rifles
- 25 Handguns
- 26 My Shopping List
- 45 Resources

To make room for the 200+ new pages, I omitted the .264 *Boston* chapter, and truncated discussion of pre-1899 guns and "*curios and relics.*" I also improved the organization of chapters.

In short, this revised *Boston's Gun Bible* is the gun book I *wish* I had written in 2000, but I didn't then have the time (as I rushed to get it in print before Gore got elected). I've learned much since 2000, and enjoyed sharing that with you here. With 848 pages, you will definitely get your 33 bucks worth!

Reprints in 2004-2008 have about 200 misc. revised pages. In particular, check out the chapters on Optics, M14, and BATFE. While I can't quite call these reprintings full-on revisions of the 2002 book, there is quite a bit of various new material in them. (If you have a printed copy of 2008 and later, you have the latest edition.)

ON READING THIS BOOK

Quotes

*Quotations are in this form. Any original emphasis is underlined. **Any added emphasis of mine is in boldface.** When I supplement a quote, my nonitalicized comments are within () or [] – (like this).*

Have a copy of the *Shotgun News*

Not only is *SGN* a great shoppers' guide, it's a reference resource. Page 7 has the issue's list of advertisers.

Gun List is the national classified gun ad paper. A good reference resource to prices and availability.

Politically Corrected Glossary

by Alan Korwin

Dear friends and fans,

We've all talked about how we're losing the war of words in the struggle for our liberties. Well here comes the cavalry.

I'll have the first part formatted as a two-column table you can download from my site, <http://www.gunlaws.com>, just as soon as I can get it posted (use the New Stuff button).

For Publication, 3,449 Words, 2/29/00
One-time North American Serial Rights
Copyright 2000 Alan Korwin
Not-for-profit circulation is approved.

POLITICALLY CORRECTED Glossary of Terms

by Alan Korwin, Author
Gun Laws of America

Part One – The Concept

Certain words hurt you when you're talking about your rights. People who would deny your rights have done a good job of

manipulating the language so far. Without even realizing it, you're probably using terms that actually help the people who want to disarm you. To preserve, protect and defend your rights in this critical debate, you need effective word choices.

They want you to say (and you lose if you say):	It's better to say (and they lose if you say):
pro-gun	pro-rights
gun control	crime control
anti-gun movement	anti-self-defense movement
semiautomatic handgun	sidearm
concealed carry	carry, or right to carry
assault weapons	household firearms
	sport utility rifles
Saturday Night Specials	racist gun laws
junk guns	the affordability issue
high capacity magazines	full capacity magazines
Second Amendment	Bill of Rights
anti-gun	anti-gun bigot, or anti-rights

When they say...

"Guns kill."
"Guns cause crime."
"Guns are too dangerous to own."

"People shouldn't have guns."
"The only purpose of a gun is to kill."
"Guns should go away."

"They should take all the guns away."
"We need more gun laws."

"Why would anyone want to own a gun?"

"Do you really have a gun?"

You reply...

"Guns save lives."
"Guns stop crime."
"Then you should take a safety class."
"Then don't trust the boys and girls in the military and police with them."

"Only good people should have guns."
"The main purpose of a gun is to protect."
"Then you should personally sign up to never have a gun in your life, under penalty of felony, as you would ask of me."

"Bad guys first."
"Everything criminal about guns is already illegal."

"You're kidding, right?"
"You mean you really don't know?"
"Well, why do you police have guns?"
"Of course, don't you?"

Then just give it a rest and watch where it goes. You'll hear their litany, replete with flaws. Don't rebut, seize the moment, listen hard and learn then just raise an eyebrow and think, *"How 'bout that. Feller doesn't even own a gun. It takes all kinds."* Then talk about something else. And boy, does the disjoint hang in their craw.

Part Two – The Glossary

PRO-RIGHTS

A more accurate, and far more compelling term than the common "pro-gun." The reverse term, which describes them, is "anti-rights." Misguided utopian disarmament advocates love the phrases "pro-gun" and "anti-gun", because they automatically win when they're used. They believe the righteous path is to be anti-gun, because only devils would be pro-gun. You flat lose if you allow a debate to be framed that way.

The debate is really between people who are "pro-rights" and "anti-rights" (and then you automatically win), because the righteous choice between pro-rights and anti-rights is obvious. You're pro-safety; pro-self-defense; pro-freedom; pro-liberty; pro-Bill of Rights (correctly casting them as anti-safety; anti-self-defense; anti-freedom; anti-liberty; anti-Bill of Rights). This is an accurate depiction of people who would restrict, repress and flat-out deny civil rights you and your ancestors have always had in America.

ANTI-RIGHTS

A more accurate, and far more compelling term than the common "anti-gun." The reverse term, which describes you, is "pro-rights." Fight the desire to cast repressionists as "anti-gun" (and by so doing casting yourself narrowly as "pro-gun"). Instead, always refer more broadly to the "anti-rights" posture they take. Make them argue rights, not guns.

CRIME CONTROL

What "gun-control" used to mean, and a generally good idea (the phrase "gun-control" has morphed to mean "disarm the public" and thus should be avoided, more on this later). Everyone basically agrees there should be crime control, so it is good grounds for détente. A common sense and reasonable proposal. Includes forcibly disarming criminals. Emphasizes the differences between criminals and an armed public.

GUN BIGOT

A person who hates guns. Typically has little or no personal knowledge of guns, may never have even fired one, certainly doesn't have any. Would subject innocent people to defenselessness without compunction. An elitist. One with an irrational and morbid fear of guns that is ignorant and immoral. Spews bile and venom at guns, gun owners, gun-rights advocates, gun-rights associations, pro-Bill of Rights legislators. Striking similarity and direct parallels with racial bigotry before (and even after) the civil rights efforts of the 1960s.

GUN BIGOTRY

The notion that you can only own a gun if it is expensive, or passes a drop test, a melting point test, a consumer products test, a government design test, a caliber size, an ammunition capacity, a lock test, etc. The notion that only idiots, miscreants, red necks, dim bulbs and other nasty-named people would own guns. The notion that you can only vote, oops, I mean have a firearm, if you pass a test run by your government, and pay the tax, often called a "fee." The notion that anyone who fails the tests – or any other qualifications – automatically forfeits their rights "for the common good." An inability to distinguish honest people from criminals.

GUN PREJUDICE

Discrimination against honest people merely for their legal ownership or possession of firearms. A common occurrence in society today. A violation of your constitutional and natural rights. Gun prejudice appears to be a federal civil-rights offense, punishable by prison and fine. Now there's a thought. Repressionists have attempted some very novel court challenges to laws that protect our liberties. Turnabout's fair play. If there were, say, a city bank somewhere that refused customers simply because they legally handled firearms...

AFFORDABLE FIREARMS

Anti-rights bigots curse these as "junk guns" and "Saturday night specials," racial epithets you should never use. The racist goal of outlawing guns unless they're expensive is self evident and reprehensible. A woman who eats inexpensive food and drives an

inexpensive car doesn't lose her right to protect her family because she can only afford an inexpensive gun.

SIDEARM

Or would you rather use the complex and dangerous sounding (though accurate perhaps) "semiautomatic handgun," a term which many people think means machine gun, according to Handgun Control (who recommends use of the term "semiautomatic handgun"). Unfortunately, "handgun" has been vilified beyond usability, and needs to be retired or at least back-burnered for now. Remember, it was the so-called Brady "handgun" law that federalized all retail sales of rifles and shotguns.

PISTOL

Or would you rather use the complex and dangerous sounding (though accurate perhaps) "semiautomatic handgun." A basic, reliable, standard type of pistol, a regular pistol, an ordinary pistol, the same kind of pistol anyone would normally own. A basic, reliable, standard type of sidearm, a regular sidearm, an ordinary sidearm, the same kind of sidearm anyone would normally own.

HOUSEHOLD FIREARMS

The type any household is likely to have. All the firearms you own, despite constant name-calling from the media, are just household firearms.

GOVERNMENT GUN

The only kind you can now buy in America at retail.

BASIC SELF-DEFENSE GUN

Any type of firearm that could save your life in an emergency.

CARRY

Expunge the word "concealed" because so many people hear it and believe only a criminal would conceal something. It implies you have something to hide. Because being discreet is a common sense, reasonable measure, there's no need to demean it with an ugly

adjective (in this use anyway) like "concealed." "Carry license," not "concealed-carry license."

LETHALITY

The quality of a gun that makes it useful as a crime-stopping, life-saving, defensive tool. A point that is attacked subtly in most anti-rights arguments. When met head on, the issue works against the anti-rights position. Caliber and capacity restrictions reduce lethality and your ability to save yourself or the state. Reducing lethality costs lives. Why should police need more capacity than you, when you both face the same criminals? How few bullets may a person use against an attacker, and how small should they be?

Guns are dangerous. They're supposed to be dangerous. They wouldn't be any good if they weren't dangerous. Anything that makes them less dangerous by reducing lethality puts you (or police officers) at unacceptable risk.

ANTI-SELF-DEFENSE MOVEMENT

People who believe you have little or no right to defend yourself if attacked, because social order may only be imposed by an authority, and that such authority is superior to your right to exist (if push comes to shove). Also sometimes referred to as socialists. Sometimes expressed as your right to keep a cell phone handy to dial 911. The anti-self-defense movement is often deceptively portrayed as the "anti-gun movement." Never let them hide behind their comfortable disguise as anti-gun.

POLITICALLY CORRECTED

Language that does not automatically bias a debate about the Bill of Rights against individual liberty and freedom. Opposite of "politically correct" language, which is basically socialist in nature. We all recognize that "political correctness" is "incorrect," and then we sneer and dismiss it. We do this at great peril, however, for PC statements treated that way don't just go away, they fester and insidiously modify the paradigm, and bend our thinking into acceptance of that which we have verbalized as "correct."

You want a good example of neurolinguistic programming and transformational grammar on a national scale, there it is to a tee. It's how we get to the Orwellian point where war is peace, freedom is slavery, ignorance is strength.

BILL OF RIGHTS

More broadly appealing and less polarizing than "Second Amendment." Sure, I like the Second Amendment, and talk about it all the time. But saying "Bill of Rights" protects you from malicious stigma and stereotyping as a gun nut. Much more difficult to oppose, slows the bigots down. All the rights count, don't they, and they're all under attack. Bill of Rights Day. Pro-Bill of Rights. I support the Bill of Rights, don't you? Actually, even virulent gun haters and gun bigots champion the First Amendment and other parts of the BOR, which, if you'll recall, was a single amendment (with separate articles) to the Constitution.

SUNSHINE GUN LAWS

Laws that encourage gun safety training and responsible firearms ownership, as opposed to repressive laws that criminalize honest gun ownership and infringe civil rights. Civil rights.

THE FIRST AMENDMENT

Stop saying Second Amendment so much, since the other side tunes this out immediately, and marginalizes you as a gun nut. Say "First Amendment" instead, and make your comparisons there does the government jeopardize your First Amendment rights? You betcha! Should you be concerned? Of course! What would you think of Internet censorship, government approved religion, font size limits, restricted word choices, acceptable word counts, licensed writers, training and testing before publishing controversial editorials, and tests for accuracy now there's a nice parallel.

People on all sides recognize there are threats to free speech, religion, privacy and more from our friends, the government. The same root problems affect the whole Bill of Rights, gun rights are no different than other rights under attack.

GUN-SAFETY CLASSES

Something that, with all the accidents reported in America, all Americans should be taking from the tens of thousands of trainers out there. Always encourage people on both sides of a debate to take a real class. Why wouldn't an honest person take a gun-safety class? Going out for some wholesome and relaxing target practice, with friends. Getting good at marksmanship. Target practice. Marksmanship. These words have not been defiled and cast a good light; use them. Privately promoted gun-safety training days. Talk up the goal of "National Accident Reduction" through education and training. Private enterprise should vigorously swell to fill the gaping theater called, "*We need more safety.*"

ROWANITES

Anti-rights bigots who secretly own guns themselves, rely upon armed guards for security, or live inside communities with private security forces, but decry your right to arms. Closet gun owners. Named in honor of Carl Rowan, a vicious anti-gun bigot whose syndicated newspaper column vilified guns and gun owners for years, to a vast audience, until he one day fired at a trespasser near his home.

GUN BUY-UPS

Gun buy-back programs are misnamed. You cannot buy back something you didn't own in the first place. Since the Brady law prohibits dumping such guns into criminal lairs (gun buyers must be certified by the FBI these days), there is no longer justification for destroying firearms collected in buy ups. That's right, there is no longer any justification at all for destroying firearms collected in buy-ups. When buy-ups are government funded, meltdowns are therefore wanton destruction of a public asset, and someone deserves to be held liable. Tax dollars are buying legal property simply to destroy it, when the only way to sell it is to certifiably law abiding individuals. What an outrage.

Where I live, savvy collectors have set up shop at widely publicized gun buy-ups to make competitive bids and cherry pick the merchandise, pre-smelter.

DEMOCIDE

Murder committed by government. The most prevalent form of murder, responsible this century alone for 170 million deaths. Regime-ocide.

GUN CONTROL

Now generally synonymous with "disarming the public." Using the phrase "gun control" in its currently twisted form distorts the debate and should be avoided; it is the other side's rallying flag, bolstered every time the words leave your lips; argue about "*gun control*" and you've already lost. Use "crime control," "accident reduction" and "disarming the public" to distinguish issues and preserve accuracy.

Listen hard when you hear the term "*gun control*" in the news. You'll notice they're basically not talking about controlling crime. They're talking about controlling you.

Always start by asking what a person means when they say this phrase, then shut up and see. Often, people who think of themselves as being anti-gun, unwittingly adopt the position that only the rulers should be armed (cop and army guns OK, but not you; such a person isn't anti-gun at all, they're simply anti-rights your rights).

When a "gun control law" regulates or demeans honest people in the false name of controlling crime, that's actually tyranny. When "gun control" controls your right to have a gun, that is people control. The phrase "gun control" is a dangerous misnomer (some would say euphemism) for an agenda now actively pursued by a segment of society that would consolidate power solely in "official" hands.

Help seize the metaphor back:

Drop into conversation how your gun control at target practice recently was better than usual, or how you have pretty good gun control but you still need some lessons. Invite someone to your gun control class at the range next Tuesday free style target practice. A well advertised gun control class might attract some pretty interesting neighbors. Jokes about gun control ("a steady hand") are neurolinguistically challenged and don't help. Say something else funny if you must be funny.

When reporters and others inevitably ask, *"Are you in favor of gun control?"* they often don't realize their question is as biased as, *"Are you still beating your wife?"* So it's up to you to show them. They're looking for a pro-or-con answer, and then a question of how much. Don't play into it. Instead, say, *"Well, I'm in favor of crime control. How about you?"*

When you write about so called *"gun control"* or so called *"gun-control laws"* always put it in quotes, to disparage it.

(BTP Note: West Germany did this to East Germany, the so-called *"German Democratic Republic."*)

THE HENIGAN/BOGUS THEORY

Named by Dave Kopel in honor of its two leading proponents (Dennis Henigan and Carl Bogus). This is the notion, first arising a few decades ago, that the Second Amendment does not protect an individual right. It stands in opposition to the fact that *"the people"* means all of us, and is responsible for the widely armed population we observe today. Covered more thoroughly in an earlier article of mine, *The Big Lie* (posted under Position Papers at <http://www.gunlaws.com>). Kopel's recent paper on this, for the St. Louis University Public Law Review, is nothing short of brilliant. David can be reached at <http://www.independenceinstitute.net>.

COGNITIVE DISSONANCE

A tool for reaching closed minds. The use of questions to point out fundamental illogic, which can then topple the notions a person builds on that flawed base. An application of the Socratic method. The mental awareness that forms when a simple question challenges fundamentally held beliefs. Here are many. One at a time is usually enough for most minds.

"If a registration list makes sense for the Second Amendment, would it make sense for the First Amendment?"

"Are criminals and an armed citizenry the same thing?"

"So why do people today carry guns anyway, and does it ever work?"

"Should it be against the law to defend yourself?"

"If a person can't have a gun, why should the police have them?"

"So if you're allowed to defend yourself, how many bullets can you use?"

"Shouldn't we disarm the criminals first?"

"Why haven't we disarmed the criminals?"

"Why don't they arrest all the Brady criminals they find? "

"Are you against an armed citizenry? "

"Do you believe that only the rulers should have guns?"

"Now let me see if I understand this; when you say "gun control," do you mean "stop crime" or "disarm the public?"

"Now let me see if I understand this; when you say you're anti-gun, do you mean you want to disarm the police and the armed forces?"

"If you don't want to disarm the police and military, you're not really anti-gun at all. You're anti-private gun. Why is that?"

"You know, after listening to you for a while, you've convinced me that you should never own a gun. "

"I'm against the idea that you should be forced to own a gun, and I would stand up for your right to not be armed. "

"Maybe you could sign up to be permanently disbarred from ever owning a gun. Would you do that (as you would ask me to do)?"

Closing Note:

This article doesn't end here. In attempting a document like this, I know I can never reach its ending. It defines a path which simply stretches forward.

If I wait until I have this evolved to my satisfaction it will never wrap. These ideas are too important to let wait that long. Consider it an early peek at a work in progress.

Alan.

Social balance has evolved into a war of the metaphor – neurolinguistic programming meets George Orwell.

–Alan Korwin

Alan Korwin is the author of seven best-selling books on gun law, including *Gun Laws of America – Every Federal Gun Law on the Books, with Plain English Summaries*, and gun owner guides for AZ, CA, FL, NY, TX, UT, VA. This paper is part of an ongoing series, click Position Papers on the home page, or write or call for copies.

LOOK AT "GUN LAWS OF AMERICA" YOURSELF:

If you knew all your rights you might demand them.

Alan Korwin

BLOOMFIELD PRESS <http://www.gunlaws.com>

"We publish the gun laws"

12629 N. Tatum #440

Phoenix, AZ 85032

602-996-4020 Phone

602-494-0679 FAX

800-707-4020 Book orders

LETTER TO A COLUMBINE STUDENT

Dear Devon,

I read your well-written essay printed on page 41 of the 23 August 1999 issue of *Newsweek*, and felt led to write you. I was sickened by the murderous rampage suffered by students and faculty of the Columbine High School.

As a gunowner, gun books author, and defensive shooting instructor, there are some thoughts I'd like to share with you about Columbine and your essay. This letter is much longer than I had expected it to be, but my readers tell me that my style is very easy to read, so I hope that you'll give it a chance.

Emotionalist arguments have been effective...on you

Although you are obviously a sincere and articulate young lady traumatized by a terrible event, much of your essay regarding suggested new "*gun controls*" was misguided, ill-reasoned, or based on emotionalism. (Are you brave enough to read on and give me the chance to prove it?)

This may sound like stern talk. It is. But since you have joined a political lobbying group and have had a full page essay printed in a national magazine, you're now in (at least for awhile) the "big leagues." Hearing criticism is part of that new arena. If you're mature

enough to purport to speak to America and influence national legislation directly affecting nearly *half* of her households, then you're mature enough to hear me out. (And I promise not to be mean or ugly, O.K.?)

Another thing that I promise is that I'll be *honest* with you. I won't lie; I won't exaggerate. The 2nd Amendment issue has truth on its side, and I won't jeopardize a perfectly defensible position by using specious reasoning or half-truths.

The real meaning of "*gun control*"

Probably without realizing it, you use the catchphrases of others. As I'll explain later, catchphrases are designed with political agendas in mind. If "*gun control*" meant only keeping guns out violent hands, I'd not only use the phrase, I'd support it. But "*gun control*" means much *more* than that. It *has* to, **because every criminal use of guns is *already* against the law!** It is *already* unlawful to use a gun to: rob, intimidate, rape, assault, kidnap, hijack, murder, etc. Think about that.

So, there is more to that seemingly innocent catchphrase. Its purpose is *not* to control guns, or even criminals. It's purpose is to control *people* by making them helpless, and thus requiring police (*i.e.*, government) protection. It is statistically irrefutable that those American cities with stringent "*gun control*" (*e.g.*, N.Y.C., D.C., Chicago, L.A.) have higher crime rates. It is also irrefutable that those 31 states which have made concealed carry of handguns easy for law-abiding citizens have correspondingly enjoyed significant drops in their crime rates. Finally, if you look at the British and Australian recent experiments with gun confiscation (not just "*control*"), those two countries are suffering from a new crime *wave*. The evidence is clear and unanimous :

"*gun control*" is actually "victim disarmament"

It is government's *nature* to want to control its citizens beyond any level proper for fighting crime. Government wants to be like a bossy mother who can't see "her" kids as grown adults:

Parents keep poison, knives, and matches out of the reach of two-year olds because of the high probability of injury or death.

– Pete Shields; *Guns Don't Die—People Do*

(...and therefore the government should keep guns out of the "childlike" hands of private citizens.)

Politicians and the media

I also believe that victim disarmament politicians and "advocacy journalism" media are shamelessly using you and the Columbine tragedy to further their own goals—goals which *many* people see as wholly unconstitutional. Had Columbine not occurred, do you honestly think that you would have been invited to the White House or published in *Newsweek*? The moral high ground of a victim is a powerful and heady thing, but it has a *very* short half-life. To them, your grief was useful *then*.

For example, Pete Shields of Handgun Control, Inc. brazenly uses emotionalism to further HCI's agenda. He called it their "Victims Strategy":

*It is the emotional appeal of the victim's story which assures communication, attention, and an emotional involvement on the part of those who are already known to be sympathetic on an intellectual level. **Using victims is the most effective way, I believe, to conduct an educational campaign that will result in a constituency willing to vote on the basis of this issue.** (p.57)*

– Pete Shields; *Guns Don't Die—People Do*

Since facts and common sense are enemies of "victim disarmament," its proponents cannot make any sustainable *intellectual* argument. That's why they must resort to the shameful use of victims, exploiting their gore and grief in order to "educate" through emotions (which is an oxymoron).

Another professional victim disarmament lobbyist argued for applying the same emotionalist tactic to semi-auto military-pattern firearms:

*The [assault] weapon's menacing looks, coupled with the confusion over fully automatic machine guns versus [semi-automatic] assault weapons—**anything that looks like a machine gun is assumed to be a machine gun**—can only increase the chance of [ignorant] public support for restrictions on these weapons.*

– Josh Sugarmann, Violence Policy Center

Christians, self-defense, and guns

In your magazine picture you are wearing a cross on your necklace. On the assumption that you are a Christian (as am I), I will begin there.

In the Garden of Gethsemane, when Jesus knew that He would shortly be arrested, He gave His disciples what He knew would be some last minute instructions. In Luke 22:36, He admonished them to buy a sword, even if they had to sell their *coat* to afford it. (The disciples said that they had two swords among them, and Jesus replied, "*It is enough.* ") This was an amazing command, for two reasons.

The coat

First, back then a coat also served as one's groundcloth and sleeping blanket for the freezing desert nights. It was no trivial matter to go without one—one could die from exposure.

The sword

Second, that Jesus specified a *sword* over other weapons is particularly significant. Jesus could have urged the carrying of a pocketknife, dagger, or axe—but He didn't. He said *sword*. A sword's only real purpose is for combat; for killing people in self-defense. Before the invention of the longbow, the sword was *the* most capable weapon an individual could carry and wield. Few people could afford one, as they cost many months of wages. I do not exaggerate in the slightest when I equate the 1st Century sword to the 20th Century military-style full-auto rifle. The sword of Judea was the fully-automatic M16 of today.

When the use of weapons is *inappropriate*

Once the mob came to arrest Jesus, Peter sliced off the high priest's servant's ear with his sword, a personal weapon *already* on Peter's person. Jesus's rebuke in Mark 26:52 of "*Those who take the sword shall perish with the sword*" had to do with Peter's *substitution* of a weapon for his lack of faith, and his lack of understanding of God's sacrificial plan for Jesus. (Note that Peter did not attack a *soldier*, or even the high priest. He attacked a defenseless servant,

in an empty gesture of rage. No doubt because of this, Jesus also disapproved.)

If Jesus had objected to general sword *carrying* by His disciples, He wouldn't have commanded them to buy swords, and Peter would *not* have been allowed to be armed in the Garden.

The difference between "kill" and "murder"

Finally, the correct Hebrew translation of *Thou shalt not kill* (*ratsach*; Exodus 20:13) is *Thou shalt not murder*—a different matter entirely than justifiable self-defense homicide. Numbers 35:16-29 explains the difference between killing and murder. Christians are not to permit their own murders.

Even the Talmud and the Koran plainly state that it's no sin to kill a killer, so I really can't see how anybody can have, after much study and thought, a problem with self-defense. Since you "*can even see someone having a handgun in the home for protection*," we probably somewhat agree on this issue.

Good Guys and Bad Guys

Devon, there are people in the world who delight in doing evil and harming others. There always have been, and there always will be. Only half of them are in prison at any given time. *Fortunately*, these evil people are outnumbered 400 to 1 by ordinary folks like you and me who don't want to hurt anybody.

You might not know that peaceable, law-abiding Americans use their personal firearms about 5,500 times a *day* for self-defense. (This was discovered in the now-famous Kleck study, which won a prestigious award for its research quality.) Not that there are 5,500 defensive *shootings* a day, as the mere display of a gun and verbal warning to an attacker usually resolves the situation without any shots fired. In fact, private citizens justifiably shoot nearly *three times* more violent criminals than do the police, while wounding far fewer bystanders than do the police. (The media doesn't admit this, but the NRA compiles news clippings of such incidents in *The Armed Citizen*.)

If only *1%* of decent folks will bother to learn how to safely use a pistol and carry it daily, they will *still* outnumber the Bad Guys 4 to 1. Carrying it in public is a must, as 87% of violent crime happens *outside* the home.

At Pearl High School in Mississippi on 1 October 1997, Assistant Principal Joel Myrick prevented, with his own handgun, further bloodshed by Luke Woodham. Mr. Myrick (who had his gun in his car and had to run a quarter-mile off school grounds to get it) was a true hero—but you wouldn't have known that from the media. Of the 700 news stories, only 19 mentioned Myrick, and just 9 explained that he used his own gun to stop the killing.

If only *one* teacher that morning at Columbine was armed to have reduced (or prevented) all those deaths and injuries.

What's *really* the problem

Evil men can *always* get a weapon. They do so even in prisons (the most controlled environment possible), so how can any mere *law* (which criminals do not obey, because they're criminals) stop them?

But laws and regulations *do* hinder (if not prevent) many peaceful Americans from owning and carrying the most efficient tool for daily possible self-defense— a handgun.

So, if we really want to be honest, it's not so much that the *Bad* Guys are armed (because there's little to stop them), it's that the *Good* Guys are *not*.

"Leave the Bad Guys to the police. That's their job!"

Yes, it's their "job," but keeping the *peace* is the responsibility of all adults. The police force as we know it today is a *recent* institution (beginning in the early 1900s in the large cities). Back then, Americans understood their responsibility to apprehend criminals if the opportunity occurred. In a way, the whole country was like a Neighborhood Watch program.

95% of all 911 responses are too late to stop the crime!

So, the average 911 caller, terrified for his/her life, has only a 1-in-20 chance of having the police arrive in time.

(But, why call the police in the first place? Because the police are *armed!* Well, why are so many people *unarmed?* Often, because the law required it! *Hmmm.*)

The police don't *have* to protect you!

Here's something else. During the research for my first book, I was shocked to learn that the police have *no legally enforceable duty* to protect any individual from criminals. If an attacker broke into your home and you frantically dialed 911, and the police were too late (or never showed up) to prevent a tragedy, you could not sue them and win.

This is because you had no "*specific relationship*" with them. You are merely part of society at large. I wish that this were just some weird exception, but this is how the courts have *always* ruled (e.g., *Hartzler v. San Jose*, *Warren v. D.C.*, and dozens of others).

It's up to *us* to defend *ourselves*. This has been true *before* police, and since. (A great book on this issue is called *Dial 911 and Die—The Shocking Truth about the Police Protection Myth* from the Jews for the Preservation of Firearms Ownership. www.jpfo.org)

Gun laws are an attempt to nationalize the right of self-defense. Politicians perennially react to the police's abject failure to prevent crime by trying to disarm law-abiding citizens. The worse government fails to control crime, the more politicians want to restrict individual's rights to defend themselves.

*But police protection in most places is typical government work –slow, inefficient, and unreliable. According to laws on the books in many states and cities, government has a specific, concrete obligation to disarm each citizen, **but only an abstract obligation to defend each citizen.** The government has stripped millions of people of their right to own weapons—yet generally left them free to be robbed, raped, and murdered. "Gun control" is one of the best examples of laws that corner private citizens—forcing them either to put themselves into danger or to be a lawbreaker.*

Even the most advanced cellular phone is no substitute for a good .38 Special.

– James Brovard, author of *Lost Rights*

One final question on police protection: Are the people of Littleton satisfied with the response of their local police and SWAT teams on 20 April 1999? (Not from what I've read.)

"Hear the other side."

In the 1960s, Jane Fonda admitted in a rare moment of candor that she made it a point to *not* read anything that opposed her views, because she feared that conflicting information might weaken her resolve. Today, this attitude is rampant.

Does Columbine have a debate team? Probably not. These days, few high schools (or even colleges do). They weren't all that common when I was your age. But up until the 1960s, nearly *every* high school had a debate team. In fact, in debate tournaments only the subject was known in advance—who would argue Pro-versus Con was chosen only just before the debate. You had to know *both* sides, each as well as the other!

Do you know why debate teams were so important? Because Americans contemplated important issues through a particular process. People did *not* take a position on an issue *until* they had studied *all* sides to it so well that they could, in a debate, argue any side with equal persuasiveness.

By "*well*" I don't mean merely parroting the general point. I mean a passionate, *thorough* argument, down to even quoting facts and statistics from memory. *Only* when they had educated themselves to *that* level of comprehensive knowledge would they *then* choose *their* side on the issue. Wow!

Have you ever heard of *anybody* doing that today? I rarely do. My first experience with it was in a college law class with this amazing professor. During case discussions he would elicit every possible view, and then have us defend *and* challenge them all! To this day, I have no idea where *he* stands on *any* issue. He was *that* neutral in class. *Every* side got fairly heard, because that's what court judges are supposed to do. More to his point, that's what *people* are supposed to do, as he knew that very few of his students would actually go on to a law career. His course was so refreshing that they jammed full every first day of registration from applicants of all majors. If you go to college, I hope you have at least *one* professor like him.

With TV and "news" magazines looking for the goriest photo and the juiciest soundbite, the truth usually gets lost in the stampede. (No doubt you saw a lot of that yourself.) **As a result, Americans have lost their ability to *think*.** Only the rare mind can put away its

prejudice and emotions to *dispassionately* study a painful issue. But that's exactly what I'm asking *you* to do. I feel that it's my duty to ask this of you on many levels: from older generation to younger, from peaceable gunowner to one who has suffered from lawless gun users, and from one American to another.

Prejudice (Latin; *prae-* before + *judicium*, judgment)

We are told not to be prejudiced against black people because their skin color is different, but it's O.K. to be prejudiced against an *opinion* because *it* is different? Racial bigotry is evil, but *intellectual* bigotry is not only acceptable, but encouraged? Is the double standard here not obvious?

Pre-judgment (prejudice) is *not* the same as taking one position over another *after* researching *all* sides.

Did you research the pro-Bill of Rights side, or did you merely accept what Messrs. Head and Grossman told you?

Did you chat with lawful gunowners as much as you did with victim disarmament advocates?

Have you spoken with Hotchkiss high-schooler Desirae Davis? She, with over 100 other Colorado teenagers, signed a letter asking politicians *not* to pass further "*ill-conceived, feel-good*" victim-disarmament legislation.

Did you spend as much time at gun shows as you did at SAFE meetings? (Have you ever *been* to a gun show?)

Did you ever click on www.nra.org or www.gunowners.org or www.jpfo.org or www.wagc.com or www.sas-aim.org?

Have you ever spoken to Dr. Suzanna Gratia Hupp? She left her handgun in her car because of Texas restrictive gun laws, only to watch both of her parents murdered right before her eyes while at Luby's Cafeteria in Killeen. She is now a Texas congresswoman, and a highly vocal champion of gunowners' rights. suzanna.hupp@house.state.tx.us

If you answered "No" to any of these questions, then guess what: you are intellectually prejudiced. This is something that nobody can afford to be, especially a *young* person soon to embark on independent life. We have two eyes, two ears, and *one* mouth. The input/output ratio is 4:1 for a reason.

Your essay asks *us* not to see Eric and Dylan as monsters; not to be prejudiced. Well, I am asking *you* not to pre-judge guns and lawful gunowners as the root of Columbine, or of any other similar tragedy. This will be difficult, but please try.

Devon, I say all this *not* to condemn you, but to illuminate that other side which you have so far left in the dark. If, after reading this letter and doing some new research, you still feel that restrictive gun laws should be applied to law-abiding folks, that will be your opinion. **But, at least it will be *your* opinion,** and not one spoon-fed to you by professional politicians and lobbyists with their own, often hidden, agendas.

"reasonable gun legislation"

Your essay did pretty well in not being overly strident or preachy, which would have been the typical route of a victim. Instead, you asked that both sides "*compromise*" to achieve "*reasonable gun legislation*." Examples were mandatory waiting periods and licensing, and limits on magazine capacity.

Many people would probably agree that such seem reasonable. I don't, for one simple reason: Regarding the fundamental right of peaceable Americans to own and carry weapons, there is no such thing as "*reasonable gun legislation*." The vast majority (*i.e.*, 99.99999+%) of the 75,000,000 American gunowners are *law-abiding*, and thus no threat to you or me. Therefore, *any* gun legislation hindering *them* is **unreasonable**.

The term is an oxymoron (*i.e.*, something that internally contradicts itself). You've heard and laughed at other oxymorons: jumbo shrimp, freezer burn, athletic scholarship, etc.

But to me and millions of other lawful gunowners, the oxymoron of "*reasonable gun legislation*" is not at all laughable, as I'll later explain why. First, let's analyze the term.

Buzzwords and catchphrases

Before I do that, please know that I am *not* throwing your own words back in your face. First of all, I wouldn't be so rude to a young person, and second, they aren't *your* words. I've been reading that sly little-phrase for years.

"*Reasonable gun legislation*," which you picked up and used twice, but did not invent, is a modern *catchphrase* made up of *buzzwords*, invented for a purpose. I am a professional book author and words are the tools of my trade, so I know.

Its purpose is this: If somebody is opposed to "*reasonable gun legislation*" then what does that make them? Why, "**unreasonable**," of course! What right does anybody have to lump somebody else into the category of "*unreasonability*" just because they don't agree with *their* version of "*reasonability*"?

The phrase also asserts that, regarding law-abiding folks, restrictive gun laws can be "*reasonable*"—when they cannot.

Other examples of buzzwords and catchphrases

Americans not pro-Clinton are "*right-wing radicals*."

Those who maintain a healthy patriotism and love for their country (though peaceful dissatisfaction with their government) are demonized as "*dangerous Patriots*."

A member of a group with unusual or unpopular beliefs (even if such are clearly nonviolent) belongs to a "*cult*."

When besieged by federal agents, that group's simple plywood home or church magically becomes a "*compound*."

Semi-auto military-style rifles (which are not machine guns or "*automatic*" rifles) are deemed evil "*assault weapons*."

Those with nonviolent moral or religious objections to homosexuality are somehow "*purveyors of hate and intolerance*."

Two very angry and disturbed young boys who murdered a dozen fellow students and a teacher are called "*monsters*."

Remember what I said earlier about learning *all* sides of an issue *first*, and *then* deciding on it? Regarding guns, you have not done this. But this is understandable. You are a young person traumatized by a terrible experience, and you never want it happen again. (If I had suffered this at 17, I, too, might have joined SAFE and flown to D.C. to meet with congressmen.) You didn't know any better then, which is why I'm writing you.

Analyzing "*Sane Alternatives to the Firearms Epidemic*"

Take your own organization, SAFE, for example. That particular acronym was chosen for a *reason*; to create in the reader a certain emotion. (The founders *could* have chosen "gun" instead of "firearms," but *SAGE* just doesn't really have the same *effect*, eh?) Now let's analyze its composition:

"Sane" connotes possible insanity of SAFE *opponents*.

"Alternative" implies that "*shall not be infringed*" in the 2nd Amendment doesn't really mean "*shall not be infringed*."

"Epidemic" equates inanimate physical objects (incapable of autonomous harm) with a deadly virus. This is not only specious, it is rank neurolinguistic programming.

The power of *words* and *images*

We are being trained to act on *emotions*, without all the facts, and that is very, very dangerous in a democratic society. For a democracy to stand requires the *finest* thinking from its members. It requires that we vote from our *minds*— not from our visceral reactions.

If you learn anything from my letter to you, I hope it is this: Guard your mind very jealously, as *words and images* are used to color perceptions, and thus emotions, and thus actions. Learn to filter the spin from what you read and hear. Begin to discern and decipher *what actually happened* (i.e., the facts) versus swallowing whole the *story* of what allegedly-happened.

If you take my challenge seriously, even for just one week, you will be amazed how seldom the full truth about *anything* gets heard. I'll leave you with two quotes on this subject:

Everything you read in the newspapers (or see on TV) is absolutely true except for that rare story of which you happen to have firsthand knowledge.

– Erwin Kroll

To somebody watching the TV coverage of Columbine, for example, the news reporters *seemed* very upset and concerned. However, those actually at the scene (such as yourself) heard with their own ears, "*Do I look devastated enough ?*" The *story* was broadcast over TV; the *truth* was evident only if you were *there*. (How does every EyeWitness TV News lead in? "*Our top story tonight...*") On this very point, didn't you "*happen to have firsthand knowledge*" as the Kroll's quote described?

Here's the second quote:

Life is an entanglement of lies to hide its basic mechanisms.

– William S. Burroughs

This may strike you as highly cynical, but the older you get you'll find it to be more true than not. "*Things are not always what they seem;*

skim milk often masquerades as cream."

My whole point, Devon, is: **Learn to think for yourself.** Don't believe me; don't believe your SAFE colleagues. Believe only your own well-researched conclusions, and even *then*, keep your mind open for new information in the future. (Think before you speak, and think before you think.)

Professional victim disarmament advocates

As a member of SAFE, no doubt that you have spoken with various colleagues. They have claimed for years that all they want is "*reasonable gun legislation.*" Ha!

Every new act of victim disarmament is but a stepping-stone to their *real* goal of the total elimination of guns in law-abiding private hands. And they sometimes *admit* it:

*We're going to have to take one step at a time, and the first step is necessarily—given the political realities—going to be very modest. Of course, it's true that politicians will then go home and say, "This is a great law. The problem is solved." And it's also true that such statements will tend to defuse the gun-control issue for a time. So then we'll have to start working again to strengthen that law, and then again to strengthen the next law, and maybe again and again. Right now, though, we'd be satisfied not with half a loaf but with a slice. **Our ultimate goal—total control of handguns in the United States—is going to take time. My estimate is from 7-10 years.***

The first problem is to slow down the number of handguns produced and sold in this country. The second problem is to get handguns registered. The final problem is to make possession of all handguns and all handgun ammunition—except for the military, police, licensed security guards, licensed sporting clubs, and licensed gun collectors—totally illegal.

– Nelson "Pete" Shields,

Handgun Control Inc. Founder and President

New Yorker, 26 July 1976, p. 58

Point #1: They're often hypocrites

A hypocrite says one thing but *does* another. For example:

Senator Edward Kennedy (D-MA), one of the biggest champions of victim disarmament, was outraged when his personal bodyguard, Charles Stein, was arrested at the Capitol for having an illegal handgun and a fully-automatic submachine gun. Bob Mann, the senator's spokesman, said that Stein was arrested because of a

"*technical glitch*" in the law. Stein's six felony counts were reduced to one misdemeanor.

(Kennedy doesn't mind guns...when *his* bodyguard carries them. If an *average citizen* had been caught at the Capitol like Charles Stein, do you think his *6 felony counts* would reduce to a \$1,000 misdemeanor? Could he have successfully whined about a "*technical glitch*" in the law?)

Senator Jay D. Rockefeller IV (D-WV) signed the 1994 "*assault weapons*" ban. Later, it came out that he illegally kept one (an AR15) at his D.C. home. The *Washington Times* wrote:

*If the senator appears to be in an awkward position here, it's because he is. It's bad enough to sign off on legislation banning law-abiding citizens access to weapons they may want... Even more difficult is trying to explain why the senator's constituents should not be allowed to obtain a weapon that he himself enjoys. **Why is he to be trusted with one any more than they are?***

Anti-self-defense actress **Jennifer O'Neill** negligently discharged her revolver into her own stomach, claiming that it "*went off.*" New York requires handguns to be registered. Hers was not. Her lawyer argued that famous actresses have a right to own a gun for protection.

(So, what was to prevent her from registering her gun and applying for a license—which she and her victim disarmament colleagues worked so hard to require for everybody else?)

On 14 June 1988 *Washington Post* anti-Bill of Rights columnist **Carl Rowan** used his illegal gun to shoot an 18 year old kid he caught in his pool. He got off, and defiantly asserted that he'd always have a gun-illegal or not. Seven years earlier, however, when the anti-gunners gave First Lady Nancy Reagan hell for having a pistol on her nightstand, Rowan wrote:

We must reverse this psychology. We can do it by passing a law that says anyone found in possession of a handgun except a legitimate officer of the law goes to jail-period!

(Rowan got off with no punishment. Handgun prohibitions don't seem to apply to Rowan. Rowan's *own* assertive opinion's don't seem to apply to Rowan! This is typical...)

San Francisco mayor and noted victim disarmament advocate **Diane Feinstein** got the city's only gun permit issued in 1980 for her own .38 Special. Still, she saw no paradox two years later in banning handguns for everybody else in San Francisco.

Other notable victim disarmament figures who hypocritically own firearms include: Sidney Baumgarten (NYC politician), *New York Times* publisher Arthur Ochs "Punch" Sulzberger, actor Bill Cosby, Jane Fonda and husband Ted Turner, Fernando Mateo (NYC "Toys for Guns Bonus Amnesty"), 1993 Illinois Attorney General Roland Burris, and former Chief Justice Warren Burger. You see, Very Important People can own guns (even when they claim guns are bad), but us Little People must not:

Do as I say; not as I do! Guns are for me, but not for thee!

One author has an plan for dealing with such hypocrites:

I suspect that even most Gun Controllers recognize the efficacy of possessing the means of self-defense. I think that while they enjoy the positive social benefits of an armed populace (less crime and freedom), they also want to believe themselves moral beings. And since they have adopted an altruist morality (through the coercive sacrifice of others), they feel pious when they believe themselves above guns and self-defense.

*Imagine that instead of voting for blanket gun control, that the government, instead, published a directory that listed each individual as either armed or a Gun Control pacifist who refuses to be armed. This Directory of Gun-Free Individuals (the application of the Nuclear-Free Zone concept applied to the smallest minority) is made readily available throughout the U. S. and in libraries. What then happens to those remaining Gun Control advocates who stick by their ethics? Whose homes are burglarized? Who is most likely to be raped? Who will suffer the most murders? More importantly, who surrendered their pious anti-gun stand in the interest of protecting their lives? **Such a proposal would show that Gun Controllers want to enjoy the protective umbrella afforded by firearms, while at the same time denying firearms so that they can, by their ethics, maintain a feeling of moral superiority.***

– Mark A. Laughlin; www.ebarricades.com

Point #2: They're lazy and biased researchers

Their "scholarship" and "research" are too abysmal for words. For example, in your *Newsweek* issue, my pen nearly ran dry from marking up the numerous inaccuracies, stolen concepts, half-truths, *ad hominems*, *non sequiturs*, false alternatives, insinuations, emotionalisms, and evasions. (If you don't know what some of the terms mean, get David Kelley's *The Art of Reasoning*. If your local

bookstore doesn't have it, call Laissez- Faire Books at 800-326-0996.)

Point #3: They are usually *untruthful*

They mouth support for lawful self-defense and promise that they would *never* confiscate the guns of ordinary Americans. I'll level with you, Devon—generally, they are *lying*. While I believe that *you* and many others are sincere in your feelings, those who are *professional* victim disarmament lobbyists, authors, and speakers are *lying*. (No, it's not a very nice word, but it's not a very nice *thing*.)

Ultimately, a civilized society must disarm its citizenry if it is to have a modicum of domestic tranquility of the kind enjoyed by sister democracies such as Canada and Britain. Given the frontier history and individualist ideology of the United States, however, this will not come easily. It certainly cannot be done radically. It will probably take one, maybe two generations. It might be 50 years before the United States gets to where Britain is today. Passing a law like the assault weapons ban (the "Crime Bill") is a symbolic—purely symbolic—move in that direction. Its only real justification is not to reduce crime but to desensitize the public to the regulation of weapons in preparation for their ultimate confiscation.

— Charles Krauthammer, "Disarm the Citizenry,"
The Washington Post, 5 April 1996

Please read that last sentence again, *very* carefully. The "assault weapons"ban was "*not to reduce crime*"but to condition us that "*reasonable*" gun controls are effective (when they're really just stepping stones to "*ultimate confiscation*.")

Here's an example of blatant statistical fraud:

2) *Contrary to popular perception, most homicides do not occur as the result of an attack by a stranger but stem from an argument between people who know each other and are often related. For murders in 1995, almost half of the victims were either related to (11 percent) or acquainted with (34 percent) their killers. Only 15 percent were killed by strangers.*

— www.vpc.org/fact_sht/firearm.htm

Do the simple math here: relatives (11%) + acquaintances (34%) = 45%. That means the remaining killers (*i.e.*, strangers) constitute 55% of women's killers—not 15%! (I doubt that this is was a mere typo. Further, women have a right to defend themselves against *any* potential assailant, stranger or not.)

Here's an experiment for you. Pick a colleague who has claimed that they do *not* support confiscation of guns from *law-abiding*

Americans. Then, go to that person in private conversation and eventually ask them "*Don't you believe that total elimination of guns is the only way to really keep them out of criminal hands?*" Privately, they'll likely concur with you. *Publicly*, they don't *dare* say it because Americans wouldn't agree.

So, what would *you* call somebody who believes one thing but *advocates* another? *Hmmm?* A...liar?

Australia's victim disarmament

As a result of one mass murderer, the Australian government coer-cively bought up 640,381 personal firearms at a cost of more than \$500 million dollars. This was supposed to have reduced crime. Did it?

Australia-wide, homicides are up 3.2%, assaults up 8.6%, and armed robberies are up 44%! In the state of Victoria, homicides with firearms are up 300%!

Australian politicians are at a loss to explain this rise in violent crime after such monumental effort and expense was successfully spent in "*ridding society of guns.*" (It's real simple: The unarmed are defenseless. If you look like food, you'll be eaten. Nothing personal—it's a food-chain thing.)

England's victim disarmament

While the number of legal firearms owners in Britain has been declining due to a hostile gun control bureaucracy, crimes involving firearms increased 196% between 1981-1992.

— "Criminal Statistics England and Wales" 1992, p.34,65

Recently disarmed British are now suffering a dramatic rise in violent crimes, especially "hot" robberies of homes known to be *occupied*. Today, the only thing a British victim can do to their assailant is yell, "*Stop! Or, I'll yell 'Stop' again!*"

Chief Inspector Colin Greenwood of the West Yorkshire Constabulary spent six months at Oxford, studying restrictive gun laws in many countries. He concluded:

At first glance, it may seem odd or even perverse to suggest that statutory controls on the private ownership of firearms are irrelevant to the problem of armed crime; yet that is precisely what the evidence shows.

Armed crime and violent crime generally are products of ethnic and social factors unrelated to the availability of a particular type of weapon.

The number of firearms required to satisfy the crime market is small, and these are supplied no matter what controls are instituted. (Note: Please reread this sentence many times!)

Controls have had serious effects on legitimate users of firearms, but there is no case, either in the history of this country or in the experience of other countries in which controls can be shown to have restricted the flow of weapons to criminals, or in any way reduced crime.

Other researchers agree:

Many advocates of gun control point to Great Britain as an example of a gun free paradise where violence and crime are rare.

*Well, there may be trouble in paradise. Our friends across the Atlantic did tighten their already strict gun laws, with the Firearms Act of 1997, making self defense with a firearm completely impossible for ordinary people. Obedient British subjects generally maintained a stiff upper lip as they surrendered their guns and their rights. **How much did crime drop as a result of this sacrifice? It did not drop at all.** In fact, according to the local newspapers, England is being swept by a wave of crime, **including plenty of gun crimes.***

This recent rise in crime is part of an upward trend that correlates well with the gradual tightening of gun control over the last several decades. The relationship between increasing gun control and rising crime is well documented in a scholarly 1999 report by Olsen and Kopel, "All the Way Down the Slippery Slope-Gun Prohibition in England". [<http://www.goa-texas.org/kopel-2.htm>] The traditional view of England as a low crime society has also been seriously damaged by the 1998 study titled, "Crime and Justice in the United States and in England and Wales", which is available from the U. S. Bureau of Justice Statistics. This report concludes that English crime rates in the period from 1981 to 1996 were actually higher than in the United States due to differences in the way crimes are reported.

*The negative result from gun control laws should not surprise us. American cities have had similar counterproductive results whenever gun control has been implemented locally. Reports from Australia are similar. **It is no coincidence that crime typically goes up after a government enacts new gun restrictions.** Several American researchers and criminologists have explored this effect. Whenever people give up their right to self defense in return for a promise of government protection, the results have been negative. No amount of social engineering will change this basic consequence of human nature.*

Unfortunately, the downward progression of gun control goes only one way. British subjects will never regain the basic human right to armed self defense.

Proponents of gun control in America have a lot of explaining to do. Unfortunately, with the aid of their media allies, this new information will probably be ignored completely or brushed off with a few carefully chosen sound bites. (mb@e-z.net)

– Dr. Michael Brown, "Results are in on British Gun Laws"

In recent months there have been a frightening number of shootings in Britain's major cities, despite new laws banning gun ownership after the Dunblane tragedy. Our investigation established that guns are [still] available through means open to any criminally minded individual.

– *The Sunday Express*, 20 June 1999

Crime in America, however, has been *falling* for years, mostly thanks to an increasingly armed citizenry. Anti-self-defense groups such as HCI and VPC put themselves through incredible contortions of fact and statistics to deny this truth.

Think of it this way: Why don't the police get mugged? Is it perhaps because they are armed?

Britain's campaign against self-defense

Today, you can't even carry a *pocketknife* on your person in Britain. Dean Payne was arrested and jailed for two weeks. His crime? His job at a newspaper distributing plant necessitated a small pocketknife to cut bundling straps, and this "dangerous weapon" was found in his car during a "routine search." Though Payne was clearly nonviolent, the magistrate declared:

I have to view your conduct in light of the great public fear of people going around with knives...I consider the only proper punishment is one depriving you of your liberty.

In another case, an American woman tourist was convicted for carrying an "offensive" weapon after she defended herself against several attackers with a pen knife.

*With gun ownership for self-protection now completely illegal (unless one works for the government), Britons have begun switching to other forms of protection. **The government considers this an intolerable affront.** Having, through administrative interpretation, delegitimized gun ownership for self-defense, the British government has been able to outlaw a variety of defensive items. For example, non-lethal chemical defense sprays, such as Mace, are now illegal in Britain, as are electric stun devices.*

*At the dawn of the twentieth century, Great Britain was the great exemplar of liberty to continental Europe, but the sun has set on Britain's tradition of civil liberty. The police search people's cars routinely. **Public hysteria against weapons is so extreme that working men are sentenced to jail for possessing the simple tools of their trade.** The prosecutions of a newspaper delivery man who carries some knives, or a business executive who saved his own life, would likely have horrified the British gun control advocates of the early twentieth century. There is no evidence that most of these gun control advocates, who only wanted to keep firearms out of the hands of anti-government revolutionaries, ever wanted to make it illegal for tradesmen*

to carry tools, or for women to stab violent predators. The gun control advocates of 1905-1920 could distinguish a Communist with a rifle from a tourist with a pen-knife. But while the early weapons control advocates made such a distinction, they could not bind their successors to do so as well. Nor could the early weapons controllers understand the social changes that they would unleash when they gave the right to arms the first push down the slippery slope.

– *All The Way Down The Slippery Slope: Gun Prohibition in England and Some Lessons for Civil Liberties in America;*
www.2ndlawlib.org/journals/okslip.html

Slippery slope of regulations and controls

Similarly, in the United States, few Congressmen who voted for the first federal controls on how Americans could consume medicine could have foreseen the "War on Drugs" that they were unleashing. Who could have predicted that a law requiring a prescription for morphine would pave the way for masked soldiers to break into a person's home because an anonymous tipster claimed that there were hemp plants, which were entirely legal in 1914, in the home? Who could have predicted that the Harrison Narcotics Act would pave the way for a Food and Drug Administration that would deny terminally-ill patients the medicine of their choice because the FDA had not satisfied itself that the medicine, available throughout Western Europe, was "safe and effective?" Who could have predicted that doctors would not be able to prescribe the most effective pain-killers, opiates, to the terminally ill who were suffering extreme pain? Who could have predicted that legislative action on opiate prescriptions would pave the way for a federal administrative agency to claim the right to outlaw speech about tobacco? Predictions of such events, had they been raised in 1914 on the floor of Congress, would have seemed absurd.

*However, as too many Britons and citizens of the United States have learned the hard way in this century, **extreme consequences may flow from apparently small steps.** The [British] Firearms Act of 1920 was just a licensing law; the [U.S.] Harrison Narcotics Act was just a prescription system; **and the serpent only asked Eve to eat an apple.***

– *op cit.*

Devon, will your proposed "*reasonable gun legislation*" be the end of it? No, it won't be—it never *is*. That's because victim disarmament doesn't reduce crime, it increases victims. American Liberty now sags under the weight of over 20,000 gun laws which have utterly failed to make a safer society. "*Gun control*" doesn't work, so its proponents always have to demand more.

Any structure is built one story at a time. Metaphorically, each "*We just need one more gun law and that will be it*" is never a ceiling. It is always the next "floor" for the next "story" in our prison—the prison *you* unwittingly help to build for us all. (Just so you know,

Americans will not surrender their firearms to a Police State as did the craven British and Australians. We're on to your game, and we won't play along.)

The unreasonableness of waiting periods

It was clearly unreasonable to Bonnie Elmasri of Wisconsin. Her husband repeatedly threatened to kill her, so she got a restraining order. She tried to buy a gun for protection, but there was a 2-day waiting period. **The next day**, Bonnie and her two sons, aged 7 and 13, were murdered by her husband.

Waiting periods have cost other innocent lives, such as Deborah Randall of Virginia, and Igor Hutorsky of New York. (Would a gun have *definitely* saved all of their lives? Maybe not, but they certainly would have had an excellent *chance!*)

Devon, these innocent people had the right to *instantly* take possession of a gun if they felt threatened. We don't require waiting periods for fire extinguishers, do we? (Both save lives, and privately-owned guns save more lives than fire extinguishers.) Besides, nobody can document even *one* case of a waiting period saving a life.

"Since the Brady Bill, background checks have prevented hundreds of thousands of felons from getting guns!"

No, they *haven't*. If so, then why aren't those "*hundreds of thousands of felons*" in prison for having committed the felony of trying to buy a gun and getting caught by the NICBC system? (I mean, come on—can anybody *really* believe that so many felons are so stupid as to go through a *background* check?)

President Clinton claimed "*hundreds of thousands*" in a recent speech, only for his own Government Accounting Office to refute it the very next day. An initial NICBC denial *rarely* means that a "*prohibited possessor*" was caught trying to buy a gun. Such denials are mostly from faulty paperwork or computer data. 93% of them get sorted out and those sales are then approved. This comes from a recently released FBI report:

The FBI reports that while 27% of applications were delayed under NICS, 93% of the delays were eventually cleared. (This means a **98.1% clearance rate**, not counting successfully appealed denials.) Additionally, 26% of appealed denials were reversed. Clearly, only a small percentage (i.e., only 1.3%) of those who attempt to purchase firearms under the NICS system are prohibited possessors. There is nothing to prevent those persons from being tracked down, arrested and prosecuted for committing the multiple federal felonies that are inherent in their attempts to buy firearms from dealers.

—American Guardian, January 2000, p.22

The unreasonableness of mag restrictions

Again, let's be precise. "*Bullets*" do not go in "*clips*." A bullet is *part* of a "cartridge" or "round," which is held in a "magazine." Mags are usually detachable, but not always.

Since 13 September 1994 (the "*Crime Bill*" which Krauthammer admitted was never supposed to reduce crime), private citizens cannot purchase *new* mags holding more than 10 rounds. (+10 round mags existing before then were allowed to remain, but they have naturally risen in price to become unaffordable. The law transformed a \$20 item into a \$70-100 one.)

First of all, a maniac can kill with a single-shot gun. Magazine capacity, whether 6 or 10 or 17, has nothing to do with it. Further, it is no real hinderance for him to quickly change mags. So, mag capacity restrictions do not restrict the criminal. (And I'm not even addressing the point that many *other* types of weapons, *i.e.*, impact and edged, are available to criminals.)

Magazine capacity restrictions *do*, however, restrict a gunowner acting in self-defense. A sidearm is tool carried for defensive use in a lethal emergency. It must be handy, and it must be effective. By effective, I mean that it must fire a round sufficiently powerful to incapacitate an aggressor.

The magazine must have as *high* a capacity as possible, because nobody can forecast how many rounds it will take to stop one's Bad Guy. For these very reasons, the police now generally use pistols chambered for the .40S&W cartridge, held in 15 round mags. Street experience has shown that such is a good blend of cartridge power and mag capacity.

However, since 9/94 lawful private citizens have been *denied* their right to load their guns to full capacity. This reduces the time they to have defend themselves (the number of rounds equals time in the fight), thus jeopardizing their lives.

How would you like your mom's car gas tank unfairly restricted to just 59% capacity, even though she had to drive through dangerous areas? Well, that's how *I* feel about *my* mom's 9mm Glock mags being restricted from 17 to 10 rounds.

"The only purpose...is to kill lots of people quickly."

Here's where you *really* didn't know your subject matter. First of all "*automatic guns*" (as you put it) have been highly regulated since 1934. There are about 190,000 privately-owned full-auto guns in the National Registry. (Only *one* has ever been used in a crime, in 66 years!) What you meant to say is "*semi-autos*," which are not machine guns, but self-loading guns that fire one shot per trigger pull. Please get this straight.

Anyway, the argument against normal (*i.e.*, "*high*" to the gun-phobes) capacity magazines goes like this: In most defensive incidents, only a few rounds are fired, versus up to *dozens* by killers on a shooting spree. Therefore, the Good Guys don't really *need* "*high-capacity*" mags, which are something only mass murderers use. This is a specious argument which needs to be firmly refuted before it festers into "fact."

Statistically, there is some truth to such numbers, but we don't live in the *statistical* world. (Do you have 1.2 siblings?) Just because "*most*" defensive gunfights are won with only 2-4 rounds doesn't mean that *mine* will be, or that *my mom's* will be. Only 2-4 rounds will *not* prevail against: poor shot placement; multiple attackers; their use of bulletproof vests; or-their strength, stamina, resolve, and damage resistance being heightened by drugs. Also, having only 2-4 rounds allows *no* margin for possible *misses*. Ask any cop or soldier who's been in a gunfight if knowing that they were down to just a few rounds wasn't a truly terrifying feeling.

A handgun round actually isn't all *that* powerful, which is why 80% of those shot by them survive. That's why it often takes *several*

rounds to incapacitate an energized and dedicated assailant (regardless of what the movies portray).

"Oh, but you just said that a maniac can reload quickly and not be slowed down. Why can't she?"

A nut on a shooting spree is typically the *only* one armed, thus *he* is in control. *He* is not receiving fire; *he* is not in danger.

However, a woman being attacked is suffering very *different* dynamics. *She* is facing an attacker who is more physically powerful (so she can't risk getting near him). She is *reacting*, and thus behind the "power curve." And, she needs as many rounds as her sidearm can hold, *because reloading costs time* –and time is the one thing that she doesn't *have*.

That 10rd mag which Congress has forced on her since 1994 may be just *one* round short of what she needs to survive. If her gun runs dry *before* she has stopped the aggression, then she's in very *serious* trouble. Any cop will confirm that:

Gunfights are usually won by the *last* shot fired.

I'd rather she, versus her attacker, were able to fire that last shot because *her* gun had plenty of ammo. A 10 round mag may *not* be enough. **Why should *she* be forced to take *any* such chance when policemen and soldiers are not?**

Look, in any fight you are delivering kinetic energy to your attacker. The *delivery* vehicle of that energy is *irrelevant*, whether punches, a swung stick, thrown rocks, or fired bullets. (A gun is just a modern way of throwing a rock.) Do you want Congress mandating that you could swing only 2 punches or throw only 4 rocks at a rapist? Then *how* is it moral to discuss 10 versus 13 or 15 or 17 rounds in an innocent victim's gun?

Restricted-capacity mags jeopardize people's safety. That's why the police and military *don't* use them. By prohibiting the full mag capacity that is my mom's *right*, Congress has decreed that the lives of government employees are more valuable than hers, and that's just plain wicked.

Am I being melodramatic to keep using my mom as the example? No, because she has been assaulted and now carries a 9mm Glock with her, every day. If she ever comes up against a dirtbag who somehow thinks that her purse is worth more than her life, I want her to have what it takes to stay alive. (What assailant would let her dial 911 on her cell phone?)

Without an *instantly* accessible handgun and *sufficient* ammo capacity, my mom could get killed if she's ever in the wrong convenience store or gas station at the wrong time.

Licensing & registration are unreasonable

This is a complex issue made of up several sub-issues, so please bear with me.

What the Second Amendment protects

A well-regulated militia, being necessary to the security of a free state, the right of the people to keep and bear arms shall not be infringed.

The Second Amendment confirms and protects two things: 1) The existence of an *individual* right, which 2) can be exercised in a *collective* manner (to form militias, which are also protected elsewhere). The militia is made up of all able-bodied men 18-45 capable of bearing *personally owned* arms for national defense.

...civilians primarily, soldiers on occasion...bearing arms supplied by themselves and of the kind in common use at the time...

– **U.S. v. Miller**, 307 US 178-9 (1939)

Because the 2nd Amendment speaks of *two* things, victim disarmament advocates have chosen to give it solely the *collective* interpretation and ignore the individual right, which is incorrect. Court decisions such as 1990 *U.S. v. Verdugo-Urquidez* (110 S.Ct. 1056,1060) have confirmed that "*the People*" of the 2nd Amendment are the same "*the People*" of the 1st, 4th, 9th, and 10th Amendments. In a recent San Angelo, Texas case (*Emerson v. U.S.*), Federal District Court Judge Sam R. Cummings struck down a federal disarmament law because it violated the 2nd and 5th Amendments. (I *strongly* urge that you read this case. Go to

www.gunowners.org/legal.htm and down to below the "Educational Links.")

If anybody persists claiming that the 2nd Amendment protects only the National Guard (which didn't even exist until before WWI), then know that they are grossly in error. Even *liberals* are now admitting that it protects individual rights:

*The truth about the Second Amendment is something that liberals cannot bear to admit: **The right wing is right. The amendment does confer an individual right to bear arms, and its very presence makes effective gun control in this country all but impossible.** The individualist interpretation, the one that holds that Americans have a right to bear arms whether they're serving in an official state militia or not, has been more or less vindicated.*

– Daniel Lazare, "Your Constitution is Killing You" *Harper's Magazine*, October 1999

"Rights are not absolute.

You can't yell 'Fire!' in a crowded theater."

Of course you can yell "*Fire!*" in a crowded theater—when there *is* a fire! Remember, don't take slogans at face value. They are too often merely *half-truths* at best.

Just because certain rights have been restricted, such as freedom of religion (e.g., Mormon husbands may not have more than one wife), doesn't necessarily mean that such restrictions are morally right. If two adult women decide that they wish to be married to the same man, what *right* does anybody else have to prohibit them? Is polygamy unusual, or even distasteful, to many Americans? Certainly, but that's not the point. The law is supposed to forbid only theft, fraud, and the use of initiatory force. It is *not* to be a moral busybody in peoples' harmless lives.

Aside from that, the Founders considered our 2nd Amendment rights to be "more special" than our other rights:

Second Amendment rights may NOT be "*infringed*"

The right of the *people* to "*keep*" (own) and "*bear*" (carry) arms "*shall not be infringed.*" To "*infringe*" means to encroach, trespass, or intrude *to any degree.*

There is no such thing as a "*reasonable*" 2nd Amendment infringement. If there were, then the Founders would have written "*shall not be unreasonably infringed.*"

The Founders knew when and how to allow necessary reasonable intrusions on personal liberties (e.g., the 4th Amendment forbidding "*unreasonable*" searches and seizures).

They pointedly refused to qualify the 2nd Amendment with "*unreasonable*" and that's very significant.

The reason why our Founders used the unequivocal and absolute language of "*shall not be infringed*" is because they always wanted the citizens to be able to outgun the government in case in case it ever grew tyrannical (as governments always have throughout history). Government was always to remain our *servant*. What servant can be allowed to overpower its employer? While this notion may sound radical today, it remains highly relevant. They understand this in *Switzerland*.

The armed and nonviolent Swiss

Every Swiss man from 18 to 50 has a *fully* automatic "*assault rifle*" with 25-round mags, and ammo. His rifle is not stored at the army base (as here)—he gets to keep it *at home!* (And this is no cheap rifle. The SIG550 would cost us over \$8,000. *We can't afford them because of federal anti-gun laws.*) Some militiamen have even mortars, grenades, and bazookas. Yet, criminal use of these powerful weapons is almost unheard of. Also, the Swiss have no gun restrictions for sane non-felon adults. Buy what you want, and carry it where you want to.

You see, the Swiss government and the Swiss citizens *trust* each other, because they're are the *same people*. In fact, the Swiss often carry their rifles with them *to the polls on election day* to remind politicians of their God-given right to be armed. (In America, it is *illegal* to be armed at polling places!)

The president of Switzerland, for example, merely presides over an executive council, and goes to work on the public tram (with no bodyguard). In Switzerland, the people *are* the government, versus here where we suffer a professional political class ruling from on high what they see to be their "subjects."

When only the police have guns, it is a *Police State*

I've travelled to a few, and they're hellish. In the former East Germany, for example, the government was so suspicious of its own people that film developing (black and white only) could be sent to only *one* lab (a government lab, of course) in the entire country, and it took 6 weeks to get the pictures! Why so long? Because the government lab made *copies* of them all for their files! (How's *that* for scary?) When I told my East German friends about our 1-hour color labs all over town, they nearly fell out of their chairs in shock.

Government officials, even American ones, cannot be totally trusted with a *monopoly* of force. They cannot be trusted to possess all, or even most, of the guns. (An example of this was post-WWII Athens, Tennessee, when veterans returning home found Athens taken over by the local police. After many abuses, the vets had to run them out of town at gunpoint.)

One nation that recently *did* have all the guns was Nazi Germany. They used them to round up nearly every minority possible and slaughter them in camps. (I've twice been to the Auschwitz extermination camp in Poland, and the spirit of death still permeates that cursed ground over 50 years later.)

Conversely, the Nazis did not invade Switzerland because the whole country was (and is) a nation of militia riflemen. **Swiss Jews did not go to Auschwitz.** And that's the point: armed free people tend to *stay* free.

"regulated" doesn't mean "to be regulated by Congress"

The Bill of Rights was passed by Congress in 1789 and ratified by the States in 1791, so the Second Amendment is over 200 years old. When reading law (which includes the Constitution), one must employ the word meanings operating during the *authors'* day, not years or generations later during the *readers'*. This is why lawyers and judges own reprinted copies of *Webster's 1828 Dictionary*, for example. They must understand a law as the *creators* intended when it was written.

Many word meanings have changed in 211 years, and in even *less* time. (When I was a boy watching the *Flintstones* on black and white TV, the last line in the song was "*We'll have a gay old time!*" "Gay" used to mean lighthearted and carefree.)

Back in the 1790s, the word "*regulated*" meant "well-trained" or "well-disciplined." Until recently, when somebody "*kept their affairs regular*" it meant that they were organized and efficient. To use even a more modern example, anti-diarrhea product commercials market to those who aren't feeling "regular" (which is a polite way to put it).

By using the word "*regulated*" the Framers encouraged the many militia companies across the land to meet often, train effectively, use common caliber lead ball, etc. (They often trained once or twice a month on Sundays after church. The whole town would turn out to watch their militia drill.)

Only out of sheer scholastic laziness or political duplicity have certain modern legal pundits (including some judges, unfortunately) incorrectly interpreted "*regulated*" to justify the 1934 oppressive taxation of military-pattern full-auto firearms for civilian ownership. (Further manufacture/importation was banned in 1986.) It is the full-auto M16 that private citizens should constitutionally be training with as an effective militia force for the potential defense of the nation.

Fortunately, in 2008, the Supreme Court corrected ruled that the 2nd Amendment protects an *individual* right, and the majority of Justices understood the historical meaning of "*regulated*".

It comes down to a matter of *trust*

By prohibiting such rifles to the average citizen (who composes the militia), the Government is not only violating the Constitution, but is admitting that it doesn't *trust* the People. (Historically, such has *always* been followed by that government swelling up to an utter tyranny.)

Britain is a good example of a country that doesn't trust its people. The Brits were mostly disarmed after WWI. Just a few years later, Nazi Germany had occupied all of Western Europe and was poised to invade England. In retreating from Dunkirk, the British soldiers had left most of their rifles behind. The British people could not contribute any, because they had no rifles either! They had no armed militia. So, in a panic, Prime Minister Churchill begged us to sell them 1,000,000 of our WWI surplus Enfield P17 rifles, which we did. We could do so because many (if not most) American men had

their *own* rifles and shotguns. *We* had an armed militia, and we still do.

But today, Congress (with presidential support) is working to disarm the American people, thus disarming the constitutional militia. They are doing this for the *sole* reason that they are afraid of future Americans having no choice but to remove them from power just like we did to the 1770's British.

What's in it for *government* if crime is eradicated?

I'm going to tell you something that will probably shock you: Most governments don't *care* all that much about *really* reducing crime. If the crime rates *really* dropped, then *tens of thousands* of policemen, prosecutors, judges, and prison guards would have to look for other work, wouldn't they? Taxes would have to be *reduced*. **What government in history ever voluntarily downsized?** None. They *can't*. It goes against government's very *nature*, which is to *grow*.

Government *could* eliminate probably 70+% of violent crime in just 5 years by promoting an armed citizenry and by giving *real* prison terms for violent offenders. They won't do this, because it would *work*. I'm not saying that politicians actually *desire* people to suffer from rape, robbery, and murder. (They could never internalize such a possible truth.) But, despite all the evidence to the contrary, they have *convinced* themselves that only the *police* should have guns.

By "evidence" I offer Kennesaw, Georgia, which in 1989 passed a law that mandated all homeowners to have a gun in their house. Burglaries dropped by 89%. (Conversely, Morton Grove, Illinois *banned* handguns and crimes of all sort went *up!*) Your victim disarmament colleagues won't tell you about that.

They also won't tell that in Florida, when 2,500 women were instructed in the defensive use of handguns in a highly publicized program by the Orlando Police Department, rapes decreased the following year by *88%!*

They won't tell you that recently disarmed Australia and Britain now have higher rates of burglary than we do, and people were home nearly half the time when those burglaries were committed! In

America, it is less than 13%, because of the burglars' fear of homeowners' firearms.

Finally, your victim disarmament colleagues won't admit to you that in *every* state that has passed "*shall issue*" concealed carry permit bills, violent crimes have dropped by about a *third* (which is much more than the other states).

The Government *knows* all this, but would rather *deny* you the right to privately and discreetly arm yourself. Instead, all sorts of "feel good" victim disarmament measures are trotted out to be embraced by sincere, but uncomprehending, voters.

For every thousand hacking at the branches of evil, only one is hacking at the roots.

– Emerson

The greatest dangers to liberty lurk in the insidious encroachment by men of zeal, well-meaning but without understanding.

– Supreme Court Justice Louis Brandeis

The "Wild West"

You wrote that Littleton was not the Wild West. You're right. The Wild West was *safer*. 1880 Western U.S.A. had an average per capita murder rate of under 2 per 100,000. Even *before* Columbine, Littleton's was higher than that. As the late science-fiction author Robert A. Heinlein once wrote:

An armed society is a polite society.

The "Wild West" certainly had its wild *moments*, but it was as civilized as rural America is today. The "Wild" image is false.

The *real* "Wild West" is...Washington, D.C.!

When you visited Washington, D.C., did you know that you were in our nation's *Murder* Capital? Instead of a Wild West murder rate of only 2 per 100,000 people, D.C.'s is 72 per 100,000! But how can that *be* when Washington, D.C. has a total ban on privately-owned handguns?

"Because criminals get them from neighboring Virginia!"

Virginians *can* own handguns, that's right. And, yes, criminals often *do* get their illegal guns from Virginia and other neighboring or nearby states.

But here's what I can't figure out: If guns cause crime, or if easy criminal access to guns causes crime, **then why doesn't Virginia suffer a murder rate like Washington, D.C.'s? Why is Virginia's murder rate only 20% of D.C.'s?**

Criminals in both places can get guns. In Washington, D.C., however, law-abiding citizens *cannot* get guns. Thus, they can't protect themselves, so they *much* more often get murdered. Simple, isn't it?

Guns don't cause crime; criminals do. And, as opportunists, criminals flourish where people are typically *unarmed*.

The futility of gun registration for reducing crime

As far as I've heard, the people who sold Eric and Dylan those guns bought them legally. Where they *broke* the law was by selling them to minors. They broke a federal law which *already* existed! What's to stop people from breaking laws—making such *illegal*? I'm being facetious to make a point: Gun laws did not stop the illegal transfer to Eric and Dylan. More gun laws would not have, either. Eric's and Dylan's gun suppliers had originally bought those guns from *licensed* dealers in *regulated* transactions. Outlawing unregulated *private* sales would not have prevented Eric's and Dylan's actions.

Private sales at gun shows are *not* the problem!

Here's something *else* your victim disarmament colleagues won't tell you: according Clinton's own 12/97 National Institute of Justice study, *only 2%* of criminally-used guns came from gun shows, yet he falsely accused the shows as being "*illegal arms bazaars for criminals*." (Nice catchphrase.)

Devon, I've been to literally *dozens* of gun shows throughout my life. Never *once* have I ever observed (or even heard about) an illegal transaction. In fact, quite the contrary.

One time, I saw three obvious gang members going to all the private-sale tables (they usually make up only 10-20% of any show), trying to buy a gun (which was their right, unless they were one of the "*prohibited possessors*" such as felon, fugitive, etc.) **Nobody would sell them anything!** Not a gun, not a holster—nothing! They

left in frustration, cursing. This sort of thing was not the exception, it is the rule. Gun show patrons, buyers and sellers, are overwhelmingly honest folks. I've never met *anybody* who would sell to a criminal.

Felons are not required to register their guns!

Since felons are prohibited from owning guns, to force their registration would be compelled self-testimony, which is an unconstitutional violation of the 5th Amendment. The Supreme Court ruled so in *Haynes v. U.S.* The same holds true for licensing; felons can't be forced to apply for one, and they can't be prosecuted for not having one.

There you have it, gun registration and licensing apply only to the *law-abiding*. But, if they're law-abiding, what's the *point* of forcing *them* to register their guns or suffer licensing? I'll explain that mystery in just a second.

Laws do not prevent *any* serious crimes, because...

...serious criminals do not obey laws in the first place! Every nasty criminal activity possible is *already* prohibited by law, so there's really no further way to legislatively affect the criminal. (Some psychiatrists explain insanity this way: *repeating* an action over and over again with the expectation of *different* results. Restrictive laws relating to peaceful American gunowners have *never* reduced crime, yet with each new law a "*different result*" of crime reduction is anticipated! Sounds crazy to me!)

Besides, it is criminals' *nature to be lawless*. No legislation can suspend or eradicate something's very *nature*. Could a law successfully make water dry, or suspend gravity? Then why do legislators continually pass laws and expect criminals to *obey* them? They *don't* expect obedience from the criminals. The only people who would possibly abide by new gun laws are...*law-abiding* people. But why regulate *them* further when they were never a criminal problem to begin with? So, *why* do legislators still do it?

Because after some point, laws are not written to catch *existing* criminals, but to manufacture *new* ones. Novelist Ayn Rand

presciently observed this 43 years ago in *Atlas Shrugged*. Here's a quote from a government official speaking to a businessman:

*Did you really think that we want those laws to be observed? ...There's no way to rule innocent men. The only power any government has is in the power to crack down on criminals. **Well, when there aren't enough criminals, one makes them.** One declares so many things to be a crime that it becomes impossible for men to live without breaking laws. **Who wants a nation of law-abiding citizens? What's there in that for anyone?***

Making *new* "criminals" out of innocent, honest people—that's the goal of gun control legislation. The Government knows that most gunowners will *not* register their guns (because they'll simply be confiscated later, once the lists have been compiled), so that will justify Government's future "War On Guns."

Regulating private sales is a hidden form of registration

The gun control politicians want to unconstitutionally regulate private sales for the *registration* value. There are over 240,000,000 guns in the hands of 75,000,000 Americans, and the Government has no idea who or where more than about 40% of them are. This is very unsettling to those in Washington. All that hysteria about "*unregulated sales at gun shows*" stems from Government's vested interest in registering *all* guns, so that citizens may eventually be disarmed.

Registration today *always* leads to confiscation later

"*We 're only asking for registration because we want to be able to trace a stolen gun back to its rightful owner,*" they claim. That's what the City of New York told *its* residents years ago. That's what Great Britain and Australia told *their* citizens years ago. And in all those places, the government went back on its word and banned guns. Sometimes they (partially) reimbursed the owners, sometimes not. Naturally, compliance has not been 100%, so the government threatens the holdouts with 4 years in prison and \$100,000 fines. It then uses the registration lists to go house-to-house and forcibly steal private property. The guns then went to the smelters, leaving the people defenseless against the new violent crimes that predictably followed. (I have friends there, so I get firsthand reports.)

Historically, governments are the worst murderers

Honest, peaceable folks don't want to register their guns, because they properly do not trust "their" government. And generally, they shouldn't. Not counting wars, in the 20th Century alone, governments

have murdered 56 *million* people. (Including wars, the total is 170 million.) A list of only the major actions (e.g., Stalin's starvation of Ukrainian farmers, the Communist Chinese massacres and genocides) would literally fill an entire page! Governments have killed *far* more people than criminals ever have.

Government is the most dangerous threat to human life

If you study the many genocides of the 20th Century, *every one of them* was preceded by gun registration and confiscation. (Visit www.jp-fo.org for the full story on this.) Think of it this way: What do governments all over the world apparently have *planned* for people that first requires them to be disarmed? The prospect is very frightening to many of us.

Armed citizens do not allow themselves to be thrown out of their homes because they're black or Jewish. *Armed* citizens do not allow their children to be dragged away for political "*reeducation*." *Armed* citizens do not allow themselves to be herded into cattle cars for the death camps.

"*This is America! That can't happen here!*"

Because enough Americans believe that is precisely *why* it *can* happen here.

It's *already* happening here. Devon, when you were 10 years old, *your* federal government gassed, burned, bombed, and machine-gunned to death *dozens* of helpless men, women, children, and *babies* huddling together terrified in their own homestead church. This was recently proven using the Government's *own* videotapes and by its *own* agents and employees (who came forward to tell what happened). It took years to prove this because the FBI concealed and destroyed crucial evidence, and only a recent court order has forced them to release some of it.

A documentary film of the massacre was made in 1997. *Waco: The Rules of Engagement* was nominated for an Academy Award. (To order-call 800-466-6868.)

A newer and even more compelling documentary is called *Waco: A New Revelation*. (National media people got to see it in Washington, D.C. at a special screening. After watching it, many of them left in tears. These hardened reporters didn't have to "*look devastated*"—*they were!* *That's* how powerful this film is!) Your parents can order this from MGA Films in Ft. Collins at 877-511-4848 (www.waco-anewrevelation.com).

The murders at Waco do not excuse the Oklahoma City bombing, but they *do* shed light on the outrage felt by McVeigh and Nichols. If only for that reason alone, the *Waco* tapes are required viewing for every American, especially the youth.

Raising age from 18 to 21 is unreasonable

You asserted, "*If you 're not responsible enough to drink alcohol, you 're not responsible enough to buy a gun.*"

The reason why adults under the age of 21 cannot buy alcohol in Colorado is *not* because they're "*not responsible enough*"—it's because a sufficient number of legislators in Denver *voted* it so. And there's a difference! (Politicians have decreed all *sorts* of nonsense: that the world was flat, and that black people could be enslaved. What makes you think their opinion on a proper *drinking age* has automatic validity?) The day any upcoming generation takes the actions of *politicians* as credible evidence of truth or reality is a day of mourning. Perhaps it has been an impressive experience for you to have met national politicians (including the president), but hang around with them long enough and the awe will wear off, believe me.

Personally, I favor *lowering* the drinking age to 18. If 18 year olds are old enough to enter into binding contracts, vote, and die for their country, then denying them the right to drink seems hypocritical, at best. (If, however, an *individual* proves to be irresponsible with

alcohol and causes damage or injury, then obviously there should be proper consequences.)

Any year of demarcation seems arbitrary to me. I know of "children" who are in their 30s, and "adults" (*i.e.*, fully self-sustaining) who are only 17. Probably the fairest *conceptual* thing is to treat individuals as adults when they *behave* as adults in all respects (*e.g.*, independence, abiding by contracts, etc.).

Forbidding private gun sales is unreasonable

The whole aim of practical politics is to keep the populace alarmed (and hence clamorous to be led to safety) by menacing it with an endless series of hobgoblins, all of them imaginary.

– H.L. Mencken

First of all, please understand that the governments (State and federal) have elbowed their regulatory way into an individual *right* protected under the Constitution. They have also convinced some of the population that such is not only constitutionally permissible, but socially necessary (even though less than 2% of criminals' guns come from gun shows).

As I explained earlier, it is the constitutional *right* of any sane, non-felon adult to buy, sell, or trade firearms *without* government permission or delay. When a free people allow the licensing of their rights, their Liberty is in trouble. How would *you* have felt if you had been required to submit your *Newsweek* essay to a federal agency for approval before it could be published? (In many countries, such would have been mandatory.)

"70 to 80% of Americans support reasonable gun legislation"

No, they don't. There are about 170 million American adults and they haven't all been asked. A *sample* of them were polled, and there's a *huge* difference. A sample of the population is not the same as the population itself.

Your own figures are indistinct

Which is it, Devon, 70% or 80%? Is it 75%? 74.8% SAFE founder John Head claims that it's 90%! (Both of you wrong.)

Polls are nearly *always* inaccurate and misleading

Poll results are purposely skewed dozens of ways (e.g., picking a particular ZIP code, or city, or State). For example, those living in the upper East side of NYC feel differently about guns than those living in the Wyoming countryside.

How questions are *worded* can shift up to 40 percentage points from one side of an issue to another. For example, here are just five different ways to poll on new gun laws:

Would you support more victim disarmament, even though many policemen have found the existing ones ineffective in reducing crime?

Would you support more victim disarmament, even though many policemen have found the existing ones not only ineffective in reducing crime, but endangering innocent people by unconstitutionally infringing on their right to defend themselves against assailants?

Would you support more gun controls?

Would you support reasonable gun controls for safer schools?

Would you support reasonable gun controls for safer schools, happy kids, a strong economy, and sunny weather?

I trust I make my point. The last questions don't ask if you support the alleged *means* to the goal; what they *really* do is ask if you support the *goal* (who wouldn't want safer schools?) and *then* link the "means" to the goal.

Moral: Polls are a seriously tricky business. I would not recommend using them to try to prove your point. (I haven't.)

Even still, just because 70-80% of people favor something doesn't make it *right*, or even lawful

Democracy is *not* supposed to be about two wolves and a sheep deciding on what's for dinner. But that's what tends to happen over time. The majority devours the minority. That's why the Founding Fathers avoided creating a democracy, and chose instead a representative republic.

Not all laws are equal

There are two kinds of crimes:

mala in se wrongs evil in themselves (e.g., murder, rape)
mala prohibita wrongs prohibited (e.g., speeding on the highway)

The Ten Commandments prohibit mostly *mala in se* crimes. **All *mala in se* crimes have long since been outlawed.** What has been keeping lawmakers busy for generations is creating *mala prohibita*. Gun laws merely *decree* things and activities (which are *not* evil in themselves) to be "crimes." See the difference? Owning a post-1994 "*assault weapon*" or an unregistered machine gun are clearly *mala prohibita*.

People don't obey *mala prohibita* (such as speeding on the highway) out of guilt; they obey out of *fear*. So, instead of laws dealing only with *mala in se* and thus enjoying the moral high ground, modern regulations (especially the gun regs) are evil interferences of harmless activities, enforced by thugs. A very wise Roman (Tacitus) once wrote :

The more numerous the laws, the more corrupt the State.

I'd rather *respect* my Government than fear it. How about you?

What's "legal" is not necessarily *right*

What's *right* is very often "illegal"

Adolf Hitler gained office in 1933 through an honestly won election. He legally used his emergency powers to constitutionally dispense with the legislature. Then he set up a police state. The Nazi's quickly enacted restrictive gun registration:

The most foolish mistake we could possibly make would be to allow the subject race to possess arms. History shows that all conquerors who have allowed their subject races to carry arms have prepared their own downfall by doing so.

– Adolf Hitler (from *Hitler's Secret Conversations*, p.403)

As "good, law-abiding Germans," they complied. And, as we all know, Nazi police *did* become "*more efficient*." They became highly "*efficient*" in separating Jews and many other minorities from society, and packing them into ghettos. These people were then rounded up

at gunpoint, stuffed into cattle cars for distant death camps in Poland, and systematically murdered.

This was all done *according to German law and the popular support of at least 70% of the people*. **But was it right?**

Just a few generations ago, over 50% of Americans sincerely believed that Africans were subhumans fit for slavery. The Congress, the President, and the Supreme Court agreed. **But was it right?**

No, *none* of it was right. And neither is "*reasonable gun legislation*." Here's why:

Individual rights are *not* subject to *collective* permission.

When they become so, that society exchanges a rule of *law* for a rule of *men*, and then it's *finished*. While we have rejected the folly of one man (a king) ruling many, we have forgotten ancient Greece's folly of many (a democratic majority) ruling the few, or the one. Evil is evil, whether enforced by one despot (monarchy) or by a *multitude* of despots (democracy).

Political fairness is not achieved by 51% outvoting the other 49%. It is achieved by keeping law at the State and county levels, thus allowing differing philosophies to *each* have their *own* haven. I don't want to rule *other* folks, and I don't want them to rule *me*. *That* used to be America.

Nazi victim disarmament laws were copied *here* in 1968!

If what I'm about to share with you doesn't totally shock you, then you might have to check your pulse.

Aaron Zelman of Jews for the Preservation of Firearms Ownership got a copy of the entire text of the 1938 Nazi gun laws, translated them, and reprinted them side by side with our "*Gun Control Act*" of 1968. **Its organization and phraseology were nearly *identical!*** "Thanks" to Senator Dodd, our Congress in 1968 used Nazi laws, even down to that insidious (and constitutionally irrelevant) concept of requiring guns to have a "*legitimate sporting purpose*."

For example, the Nazi Weapons Law (18 March 1938; § 25(1)) forbade the manufacture and importation of firearms which: "*fold-*

down, break-down, are collapsible, or are dismantled—beyond the common limits of hunting activities..."

Similarly, our "*Gun Control Act*" of 1968 (at 18 USC ° 925(d)(3)) permits the importation of firearms only if they are "*of a type...generally recognized particularly suitable for or readily adaptable to sporting purposes.*" Further, our "*Crime Bill*" of 1994 forbids the manufacture and importation of semi-auto rifles and shotguns with a "*folding or telescoping stock.*"

Sound familiar?

The Nazi Weapons Law (sections 15, 25, 26) vested the power to decide the fitness of weapons (and their owners) in the unelected bureaucracy and the Nazi courts.

The "*Gun Control Act*" of 1968 (at 18 USC 925(d)) also purports to vest the power to determine whether a firearm has a "*sporting purpose*" in the Secretary of Treasury, in the unelected BATF bureaucracy, and in the federal courts.

Sound familiar?

Don't believe *me* on this. Get *Gateway to Tyranny* from JPFO (www.jpfo.org; 800-869-1884). Show it to SAFE founder John Head. He's an attorney; I'd like to see him try to explain away all this as a "coincidence."

The *National Instant Criminal Background Check System*

In a 15 May 1998 letter to the BATF regarding the proposed NICBC system, Aaron Zelman of the Jews for the Preservation of Firearms Ownership (www.jpfo.org) wrote:

*It is an undisputed fact that the overwhelming majority of firearms owners are not violent criminals or firearms abusers. The proposed de facto national registration plan therefore is largely irrelevant to crime detection or prevention. **The plan must have some other purpose.** The effects of the national "instant check" system are:*

- 1) to register nationally as many firearms owners as possible without their knowing assent,*
- 2) to accustom Americans to federal government intrusion into their minute daily affairs,*
- 3) to stigmatize firearms as dangers to society requiring federal control,*
- 4) to stigmatize firearms owners as criminal suspects needing federal monitoring and control,*

5) to serve as an intermediate step toward total federal control of firearms ownership, and

6) to pave the way for future firearms confiscation and/or future persecution of firearms owners.

The national "instant check" regulations proposed by the BATF eerily follow the path of Nazi Germany. In his scholarly account of how the Nazi German government accomplished the Holocaust, Richard Lawrence Miller identified the five step process of genocide:

The 5-step process of genocide

From *Nazi Justiz: Law of the Holocaust*, p.3:

- 1) Identification/registration of targeted group as public menace.
- 2) Ostracism of the targeted persons.
- 3) Confiscation of property of the targeted persons.
- 4) Geographical concentration of the targeted persons.
- 5) Annihilation of the targeted persons.

"Gun control" historically leads to genocide

Simkin also wrote a second book called *Lethal Laws* which shows that all modern genocides were preceded by gun bans. As he once said, *"How is it physically possible that so many people could be murdered in a so short a time by a mere handful of oppressors? The answer is gun control. You cannot have a genocide without having gun control."*

Simkin sent copies to the President and every Congressmen, Senator, and Supreme Court Justice. Silence from all but a few of those 545 government "leaders." Simkin also sent the evidence to the major media. (They ignored it. They *had* to.)

Now do you understand why gunowners get pretty upset when talk of more "*reasonable gun legislation*" is casually mentioned? *They* know the historical end result of such is *death*.

Schindler armed his Jews after Germany's surrender

The movie *Schindler's List* left out a crucial part of the true story: Before his factory floor speech upon Germany's surrender, Oskar Schindler distributed rifles to dozens of Jews! Director Steven Spielberg, no friend of our right to self-defense, pointedly chose *not* to dramatize this! (When asked why he supported "*gun control*" even

though he owns many machine guns, Spielberg replied, "*That's for them!*")

The Constitution

Because of Article V, the Constitution is *very* difficult to change, for a good reason. Since just 13 States (regardless of size) can prevent the adoption of *any* amendment, it is expressly undemocratic. This was so designed on *purpose*. We were to have the benefit of honest and moral law for the *ages*, which *transcended* changing popular opinion and the mood of the day. Only when 38 of the 50 States feel strongly enough on an issue, is the Constitution (including the 2nd Amendment) allowed to be amended.

Congress and the President are illegally trying to amend, if not abolish, part of the Constitution through legislation.

Gun violence and children

Yes, I've also read that 13 young people die every day in this country from gun violence. But why? *Who* are they? First of all, that statistic has been enlarged by including young *adults* up to 19 years of age. When the Jews for the Preservation for Firearms Ownership challenged the figure, Sarah Brady of HCI lowered it to 11.56. (Visit www.jpfo.org/alert, 6 March 2000, for the full story.)

Second, most of the deaths are from suicides and gang-related murders. The *manner* of death (from a gun) is incidental to the *real* issues of suicides and gang violence.

Tragedies such as Columbine are the ultra-rare exception, but even still, the guns involved are *incidental*. If they are not, then why is nobody demanding that propane bottles like the ones which Eric and Dylan used be banned for everyone?

Kids-with-guns are *not* the problem. There have *always* been guns in schools, such as rifle teams, hunting safety classes, ROTC, and .30-30 Winchesters in high-schoolers' pickups.

Guns are not at fault; guns are simply being misused. **The problem is *bad* kids with guns.** We're seeing a dramatic increase in the number and viciousness of troubled kids. What's *creating* all these highly disturbed youths who are dousing sleeping parents with

gasoline, shoving elderly people down stairs, and shooting up their high schools in a blaze of suicide?

Columbine does not justify further gun restrictions

If I or any other gunowner had been in a position to stop Eric and Dylan, we would have tried, just like Assistant Principal Joel Myrick did in Pearl, Mississippi. But the fact that too *few* honest folks are daily armed does not justify insisting on their *further* disarmament. Because Eric and Dylan chose to criminally use firearms, why are America's 75,000,000 *lawful* gunowners being unfairly linked to this tragedy?

The warning signals were there...

Why did two obviously disturbed and seethingly angry boys get no help in time? Dylan was your *friend*. Didn't you at least *sense* that he was so troubled? Did you think that Eric was a healthy friend for Dylan? If not, did you ever *tell* him?

As you wrote, "*But someone had to make monsters out of them.*" Well, just who *did*, and how can we prevent them from making more? Parents are (or at least *should* be) responsible for the diets (body, mind, and spirit) of their kids. On this point, I'm very curious why nobody is asking:

Why *didn't* the Harris and Klebold families *vigorously* prevent their own son's *poisonous* interests, such as extremely violent video games and websites?

Why is nearly every commentator on Columbine "*hacking at the branches of evil*" and leaving the roots untouched?

"Gun control" helps massacres to succeed

Analyzing history's mass murders for common criteria has proven very illuminating. There is a formula, and it is nearly 100% accurate. It is this:

- Person with evil intent to kill many people
- + Any deadly weapon
- + Guarantee that the intended victims can't fight back
- + Expectation that the police won't prevent the killing
- = **Mass murder**

The formula "worked" in Littleton, it worked on 2 November 1999 in Hawaii at the Xerox building—it has worked nearly every time it has been tried. The "*gun free school zones*" are places where mass murderers *know* they won't be resisted. (Conversely, they *don't* go to gun shows, police stations, or military bases—do they?) Disarming ordinary Americans isn't the answer—it is the *problem!* (Declaw your housecat and see how long she lasts in the wild.)

THE RISK OF MORE GUN CONTROL

*That the United States was born out of an armed rebellion fueled, in large part, by resentment over excessive taxation is a bit of history that **makes statist**s extremely **uncomfortable**. It should, therefore, come as no surprise that congressmen and senators who dream of an ever-expanding welfare state consistently vote to restrict individual gun ownership or even ban the production of certain classes of firearms.*

*As we enter the 21st Century, rates of taxation have reached oppressive levels. To statist*s (who seek only to expand government power), growing resentment on the part of people who work, produce wealth, and pay oppressive taxes presents a serious threat. Disarming ordinary Americans who will be called upon to pay ever higher taxes is seen by them as necessary to minimize that threat.

– Howard J. Fezell, Esq., "Early American 'Gun Control'"

www.2ndamendment.net/2amd8.html

Have you or anybody else at SAFE *really* analyzed what the end results of your "*reasonable gun legislation*" might be? Has anybody actually done the "math" on all this?

As I said, there are about 240,000,000 guns in the hands of 75,000,000 Americans (nearly 1 in 2 adults, and more than the populations of Britain or France). If the Second Amendment ever *were* somehow repealed through Article V (or explicitly ignored by Congress and the President), it would cause Civil War 2, with many States seceding. I kid you not.

Further, even if it *were* somehow possible (which it's not) to eliminate 99% of all lawfully-owned guns (and neutralize 99% of the gunowners), that would still leave 2,400,000 guns in the hands of 750,000 *very* upset citizens.

Do you for one moment believe that those 750,000 armed people would simply *lay down*? No, they would proceed to fight and win a *Second* American Revolution. (Sure, the Government has tanks and jet aircraft. So did the Soviet Union when it invaded Afghanistan, and look what happened to them. They got waxed by untrained peasants with bolt-action rifles.)

Armed Americans will *stay* armed—*period*. The gun haters are banking on the *docile cooperation* of gunowners, and they're dreaming. It *won't* happen. **What they don't appreciate is that gunowners enjoy an actual culture.** The Government *could* successfully outlaw, for example, the wearing of orange shirts,

because there's no culture involved (much less a deeply entrenched one). *Cultures*, however, do *not* die easily— especially when they can and will defend themselves.

Devon, you must understand how very seriously *tens of millions* of Americans view their God-given right to self-protection from criminals and tyrannical government. They have been putting up with your so-called "*reasonable gun legislation*" for as long as your grandparents have been alive, and they are *not* going along with any *more* of it.

They are tired of hearing from professional media liars (e.g., Dan Rather, 2 August 1999 *CBS Evening News*) that the Second Amendment does not protect an *individual* right, when these same hypocrites have no problem owning and using guns *themselves* (e.g., with his semi-auto Browning shotgun, Dan Rather scared away burglars from his home on 8 April 1972).

American gunowners have been squeezed for two generations, and we've arrived at the irreducible core. There will be no more "*compromises*." They've been doing that since 1934.

They are sick and tired of excessive taxes, crushing and contradictory regulations, and a haughty, unaccountable Government which scoffs at both the Constitution and its *own* laws. Trying to take away their guns *will* be the last straw. My advice is to leave the 75,000,000 law-abiding American gunowners *alone*. They are a sleeping giant that you don't want to awaken.

They will *never* meekly disarm as the Brits and Australians have, and as the Canadians are about to. Never. (Oh, *some* might disarm, but not enough. Not 99%—not even 50%.)

It's *your* choice

He who will not reason is a bigot; he who cannot is fool; and he who dares not is a slave.

– William Drummond

So, Devon, how *far* do you want to push for more victim disarmament which does *not* affect criminals, costs *innocent* people their lives, is *unconstitutional*, and increasingly *alienates* 75,000,000 peaceable but armed citizens from the Government?

Further 2nd Amendment violations are a *big* mistake. They may be the biggest mistake a foolish America ever commits. Do you *really* want that on your conscience?

There's a book I highly recommend (but not to young people because it's R-rated) called *Unintended Consequences* by John Ross. I can summarize its 861 pages for you: Quit squeezing something that's not even a pimple (though you *think* it is), or else it will soon turn into a very messy *boil*.

One book I *can* recommend to you is *The Mitzvah*. It's a tiny paperback and easy to read. Get it from www.jpfo.org.

Think this through some more—a *lot* more

Although 17 years of age is *young* enough to "know everything," it is not *old* enough to know everything. Alexander Pope once wrote, "*A little learning is a dangerous thing.*" People with *no* knowledge don't act or express opinions because they can't. People with a *little* knowledge are suddenly imbued with huge moral convictions, usually ill-founded.

Devon, please consider *all* sides to the gun issue before you commit yourself to any train of thought (much less, a course of action). I ask this of you, not only in *my* interests, but in yours. Life is too short to be led through the nose by catchphrases and false alternative arguments, and you're barely old enough to know that it's happening to you. But it is.

Finally, please keep this in mind...

I can't begin to explain to any high-schooler how much they will change over their next 10 years. (I'm sure that any parent would agree with me!) The younger one is, the more one should keep complex issues "on a shelf" for lots of pondering.

Don't be insulted by this. I mean no insult, as this letter was written with respect and courtesy. I know that you take your feelings on guns very seriously, but given that you are but 6 years out of the 6th grade and still supported by your parents, I (who have been an adult longer than you have been alive) necessarily have a different perspective.

O.K., I'm done writing

Thank you for reading my letter. I didn't plan on it being so long, but I wanted to clearly and thoroughly make my points. I spent quite literally an entire day (and a beautiful sunny one, at that!) writing to you, and that's a lot of valuable time for a professional author. I mention this not to impress you with how important I think I am, but how important I think *you* are.

If you and your family have never attended a gun show to see what all the (needless) fuss is about, I will be happy to be your guide. (Denver has a show nearly every month.) You all would meet some really nice people, and they would no doubt like to personally express their sadness at Littleton's tragedy, and reassure you of the fact that they do everything they can to prevent criminals from getting guns.

Further, if you and your family have never shot a gun before, I offer to take you all to the range for an afternoon to show you the basics of safety and handling. (There's a good chance that you'd even find it fun!) I've taught dozens of people over the years, and am regarded as a very good instructor. (Even if one chooses not to own a gun, one should still know how to safely handle and unload them.)

Was my letter at least more interesting than your homework? (If so, then I accomplished *something!*)

I hope that you will give me the courtesy of a full reply.

Very truly yours,

Kenneth W. Royce

P.S. I've always liked this quote :

The mind will be governed. If it finds no government within it will embrace whatever government offers itself from without (by others).

– R. Mitchell, *The Underground Grammarian*

I wish you a long and happy life of good self-government.

THE REAL GOAL OF "GUN CONTROL"

The evils of tyranny are rarely seen but by him who resists it.
– John Hay, *Castilian Days II* (1872)

In case you've fallen for the lie that "*just one more law is needed, and then everything will be fine,*" here are a few quotes of theirs to set you straight:

*We're going to have to take one step at a time, and the first step is necessarily – given the political realities – going to be very modest. Of course, it's true that politicians will then go home and say, "This is a great law. The problem is solved." And it's also true that such statements will tend to defuse the gun-control issue for a time. So then we'll have to start working again to strengthen that law, and then again to strengthen the next law, and maybe again and again. Right now, though, we'd be satisfied not with half a loaf but with a slice. **Our ultimate goalCtotal control of handguns in the United States – is going to take time.** My estimate is from seven to ten years. (BTP Note: They're a little behind schedule!)*

The first problem is to slow down the number of handguns produced and sold in this country.** (BTP Note: This is happening now, with city lawsuits against the domestic gun manufacturers.) **The second problem is to get handguns registered.** (BTP Note: The first phase of this is the NICBC system which is quietly, though illegally, registering all new owners of any firearm.) **The final problem is to make possession of all handguns and all handgun ammunition – except for the military, police, licensed security guards, licensed sporting clubs, and licensed gun collectors – totally illegal.

– Nelson "Pete" Shields,
Handgun Control Inc. Founder and President
New Yorker, 26 July 1976, p. 58

The prohibitionists actually *believe* that in order for our society to become "civilized" (*i.e.*, like Britain and Canada), peaceable citizens must first be disarmed. But what about the 2nd Amendment? Doesn't it explicitly protect the individual's right to keep (*i.e.*, own) and bear (*i.e.*, carry) arms. Yes, it *does* and the liberals now *know* it:

*The truth about the Second Amendment is something that liberals cannot bear to admit: **The right wing is right. The amendment does confer an individual right to bear arms, and its very presence makes effective gun control in this country all but impossible.** The individualist interpretation, the one that holds that Americans have a right to bear arms whether they're serving in an official state militia or not, **has been more or less vindicated.***

So why must we subordinate ourselves to a 208-year old law that, if the latest scholarship is correct, is contrary to what the democratic majority believes is in its best interest? They (the Founding Fathers) are dead and buried and will not be around to suffer the consequences. We the living will.

– Daniel Lazare, "Your Constitution Is Killing You,"
Harper's Magazine, October 1999

Daniel Lazare? Now I remember that name! He is the author of *The Frozen Republic* whom I quoted on page 10/6 of my *Hologram of Liberty*. (Danny proposed that a future House of Representatives just ignore whatever parts of the Constitution it found archaic or inconvenient, the Supreme Court be damned. This worm is getting *far* too much ink.)

O.K., time for an "expert opinion." A psychiatrist speaks:

On page 49 of the 23 August 1999 issue of *Newsweek* is found an essay "The Psyche of a 'Gunocracy'" by Robert Jay Lifton, M.D. of John Jay University in NYC. It is a particularly sly essay, full of stolen concepts, revisionist history, and false premises. I hope you're sitting down for this:

*Indeed, the gun has become close to a sacred object, revered by many as the essence of American life. The sources of our "gunocracy" date back at least to the Revolutionary War **and our romanticized visions of citizen militias**, which place the gun at the center of our national creation myth.*

"*Romanticized visions of citizen militias*"? Throughout the day of 19 April 1775, militiamen by the *thousands* swarmed like bees around the retreating Redcoats and fought them over 20 miles back to their boats. This was no "*vision*" (much less a self-serving "*romanticized*" one) – this is historical fact! However, Lifton (yet another pansy NYC

liberal we see so often in the media) maintains that such a display of desperation and courage didn't really happen, and that we made it all up in order to create a "*mythology*" on private ownership of firearms.

Killers like Furrow and McVeigh have long since upgraded their arsenals from flintlock rifles and Colt pistols to assault weapons and fertilizer bombs.

Follow the "reasoning" here: As marijuana is allegedly the "gateway drug" to cocaine and heroin, handheld firearms are "gateway weapons" for weapons of mass destruction.

*The latter are lethal enough, but we should not delude ourselves into believing that weapons worship stops there. Aum Shinrikyo, the fanatical Japanese cult that released sarin gas in the Tokyo subways in March 1995, killing 12 and injuring 5,000, has another lesson to teach us. **Its gurus and his disciples had no equivalent tradition of gunocracy to draw upon.***

Well, if the Japanese have no firearm "gateway weapons" for weapons of mass destruction, then how did a cult magically springboard into using sarin gas? Lifton, apparently without realizing it, destroys his own silly argument of "*the worship of the gun can be extended to weaponry of any kind, including that which may destroy everything.*"

Still, even Lifton had to admit that not every American gunowner is fanatical or mentally disturbed:

...many ordinary Americans have also become caught up in the cult of the gun. For them, it is not a jarring source of violence but as much an accepted part of the landscape as forests and rivers. Such people often resist controls over the objects they revere. But human beings are capable of modifying their own mythologies.

Gee, Lifton is so sharp! He's figured out why Americans are so upset with proposed gun registrations and gun bans – we just don't like having our "*mythologies*" tampered with. (Naturally, it has nothing to do with freedom or self-defense from both criminals and government...) "*Gosh, leave our 'accepted part of the landscape' alone!*" (Only in NYC can somebody so craven and clueless retain air in his fatuous pair of lungs.)

Americans (i.e., the gunphobic ones) have shown signs of a change in their feelings about guns, seeing them increasingly more dangerous than sacred. That kind of collective psychological shift is necessary if we are ever to transcend the crippling fraternity of the gun.

Since we live in a "democratic" society where government tyranny is deemed conceptually impossible ("*Why, the voters would never allow it!*"), since everybody can now carry a cell phone to dial 911 ("*Why do you 'need' a gun when the police will protect you?*"), guns are allegedly no longer necessary. Those who loath the Bill of Rights actually expect gunowning Americans to give up the "*myth*" of their "*gunocracy*," to cease this senseless "*weapons worship*," and to relinquish their "*icons of freedom and power*." (Give me a minute here to stop this convulsive laughter. O.K., I'm back.)

Well, Bobby, you can whine about the "*crippling fraternity of the gun*" in *Newsweek* all you want – it will take an impossible level of force to disarm 75,000,000 gunowners, no matter *how* many \$27,000/year SWAT thugs you send. Further, we're not going to disarm *voluntarily*. We're staying armed; get used to it.

Cloister your little self in NYC teaching psychiatry, feeling all warm and safe and fuzzy. Oh, and by the way,

A fear of weapons is a sign of retarded sexual and emotional maturity.

– Dr. Sigmund Freud, *Introductory Lectures on Psychoanalysis*

So, Robert Jay Lifton, psychiatrist – heal *thyself*.

Wussies of a feather, flock together

Have you noticed that nearly all those paranoid about guns live in big cities, and usually eastern ones, at that? To live in Rural America requires toughness and responsibility, which these petunias don't have. Lazare and Lifton couldn't *hack* it in Billings, Montana or Moab, Utah – or anywhere in between. It takes an *adult* to live in the country. As unformed larva, these Alan Aldas must stay in their familiar metropolitan cocoon, where reality is desperately suspended. Only from there can they safely typewriter snipe at us butt-crack country folk. These guys aren't men; they're women with erroneous plumbing. During a lethal emergency, you and I don't squeal for a cop or dial 911. They *have* to.

Honestly, these people cannot do *anything* for themselves. They are adolescents inhabiting adult bodies, still living in their crib. I was once at a Manhattan party when the stereo went out. While they were milling about or busy thumbing through the Yellow Pages for a repairman, I merely plugged back in the speaker wires that

somebody had tripped over. The other guests had never seen such an unexpected display of random competence, and I was thereafter treated as a *god*. "*Hey, meet Ken Royce – he fixed the stereo!*" It was both heady and revolting. A similar thing happened again years later when on a movie set I fixed the grip truck's frozen starter solenoid by pounding on it. By their awe, you'd have thought I built space shuttles out of beer cans.

Not only is metro life a virtual reality, it's a form of insanity ("*a sustained disassociation with reality*"). Life in NYC or LA is not real, but do they ever *think* it is! And they want us to be just like them. As I once quipped:

The mole hates not only mountains, but mountaineering.

Lazare and Lifton cannot bear to know that rugged and independent people not only persist in being born, but still enjoy huge geographical areas in which to generally thrive:

*Gun Control advocates are first cousins to those people who "cannot stand to know that someone, somewhere is happy." ...**Gun controllers "cannot stand to know that someone, somewhere is capable of defending themselves."***

Gun Control advocates envy those who are happy and willing to defend their lives for they recognize that these are people able to deal with the world. In other words, that which they view as evil they believe to be efficacious.

*The envy they feel leads them not to seek similar abilities for themselves, but to bring the target of their envy down to their level. **They don't want to be as able at self-defense as you, they want you to be rendered as defenseless as they.** Basically they harbor a fundamental hatred of life (and of those who would dare to live one), which translates into an unwillingness to permit others the right to self-defense. They recognize protection as a value for human life, but they are the ones who do not value human life as such; therefore their hostility to handguns, for protecting human life; and industry, for supporting human life.*

***Gun Controllers fear guns for two basic reasons.** By their ethical standard (altruism) guns are evil because they are meant for preventing the sacrifice of the individual....*

***Others fear guns because the presence of a gun brings them to face the means of forcing their whims on others.** These are the modern day Hitlers that haven't the courage to identify the means of their goals. **They want to keep the means, guns as weapons of initiatory violence, discreetly hidden from sight.** These are the smiling bureaucrats, the ones flanked by armed thugs; who, when physically confronted with firearms as one of the tools of subjugation, **are forced to see and recognize their own adopted but hidden means.** They are unable to maintain the illusion within their own mind, they can no longer evade the fact that firearms represent to them not a means of defending man's rights **but of violating them.** They fear the firearm because it forces them to acknowledge their evasions.*

– Mark A. Laughlin
www.ebarricades.com/root/POF7.html

My "*best interest*" is to be armed and remain armed

I don't care if 99% of the electorate demand that I dump my guns into the ocean, or turn them in for \$5,000 each – *I will remain armed*. The purpose of our Constitution is to ensure sufficient political *ballast* to weather the constantly shifting winds of democratic opinion. If the free speech right of the KKK, for example, were left to Lazare's "*what the democratic majority believes is in its best interest*" then the KKK could never publish anything, much less stage their silly little marches. That accomplished, the piously empowered majority would then continue to nibble at the fringe, until they began to consume themselves. The truth of the matter is this:

Individual rights are *not* subject to collective permission.

Period.

O.K., gunowners one day get outvoted; so what? I mean, *really* – what can an *unarmed* majority do to an *armed* minority? Not much. And *that* is what liberals are really fuming over.

Gradual "*gun control*"

The time to guard against corruption and tyranny is before they shall have gotten hold of us. It is better to keep the wolf out of the fold than to trust him not to draw his teeth and talons after he shall have entered.

– Thomas Jefferson

In response to this harsh reality, liberals have had to convince themselves that citizen disarmament can be accomplished with no backlash through "gradualism" (*i.e.*, one slice at a time). (The *last* time a central government tried to forcibly round up firearms on *these* shores was an early morning on 19 April 1775, and we all know just how well *that* turned out.) Here's a quote from another mouthy gunphobe :

Ultimately, a civilized society must disarm its citizenry if it is to have a modicum of domestic tranquility of the kind enjoyed by sister democracies such as Canada and Britain.

(BTP Note: The recently disarmed British are now suffering a dramatic rise in armed crimes, especially "hot" robberies of homes

known to be occupied. If you look like food, you'll be eaten. Crime in America, however, has been *falling* for years, thanks to an increasingly armed citizenry.)

Given the frontier history and individualist ideology of the United States, however, this will not come easily. It certainly cannot be done radically. It will probably take one, maybe two generations. It might be 50 years before the United States gets to where Britain is today. (BTP: Not if I can help it!) Passing a law like the assault weapons ban is a symbolic – purely symbolic – move in that direction. Its only real justification is not to reduce crime but to desensitize the public to the regulation of weapons in preparation for their ultimate confiscation.

– Charles Krauthammer, "Disarm the Citizenry,"
The Washington Post, 5 April 1996

Hear that? The "*Crime Bill*" was just a "symbolic" gesture which had nothing to do with crime, but was just part of the desensitizing continuum. As Nazi Propaganda Minister Josef Goebbels was fond of saying, lie to the people often enough and boldly enough and they will eventually believe.

"Civil society" means sheep ruled by wolves

*The falcon cannot hear the falconer;
Things fall apart; the centre cannot hold;
Mere anarchy is loosed upon the world,
The blood-dimmed tide is loosed, and everywhere
The ceremony of innocence is drowned;
**The best lack all conviction, while the worst
Are full of passionate intensity.***

*And what rough beast, its hour come round at last,
Slouches towards Bethlehem to be born?*

– William Butler Yeats, "The Second Coming" (1921)

[N]o reform can be meaningful without a tough program for dismantling existing arsenals (sic), applying not just to handguns but to all assault weapons (and ammunition). After a brief amnesty, the dismantling of all unregistered and unregulated weapons must be swift and thorough. (Heh! Good luck!)

– Attorney Ronald Goldfarb, "Domestic Disarmament," *The Washington Post*, 21 November 1993, page C3

*In the short term, of course, the police must be given the firepower that's required to combat the firepower they now face. In the long run, however, we need fewer guns. **Semiautomatic weapons and other weapons of war have no legitimate place in civil society and ought to be banned outright, right now...***

– Hubert Williams, "End the Domestic Arms Race,"
The Washington Post, 26 March 1997, page A19

If being "*civilized*" means being at the defenseless mercy of criminals and government, I'll stay a "savage," thank you.

*...when the struggle seems to be drifting definitely towards a world social (i.e., socialist) democracy, there may still be very great delays and disappointments before it becomes an efficient and beneficent world system. **Countless people – will hate the new world order and will die protesting it.** When we attempt to evaluate its promise, we have to bear in mind the distress of a generation or so of malcontents, many of them quite gallant and graceful-looking people.*

– H.G. Wells, *The New World Order* (1939)

The totalitarians have followed this rule [of isolation to induce a conditioned reflex] and know that they can condition their political victims most quickly if they are kept in isolation. In the totalitarian technique of thought control, the same isolation applied to the individual is applied also to groups of people. This is the reason the civilian populations of totalitarian countries are not permitted to travel freely and are kept away from mental and political contamination.

*That is the reason, too, for the solitary confinement cell and prison camp; and what of the neighborhoods where people are afraid of each other, where every one is a stool pigeon? Do you really think that the 800 telephone numbers about child abuse, elderly abuse, environmental abuse, are to protect the public? **I propose to you that they are designed to create a state of isolation where no one trusts anyone else.** The bounty given to the stool pigeon in all of these schemes makes us all afraid, keeps us isolated and,....better subjects for menticide (i.e., to murder the mind).*

– Thomas Dorman, M.D.

www.zolatimes.com/V4.13/dignity2.html

They are now turning in *pocketknives* in Britain. Is there a knife ban? **No, it's voluntary, as preemptive compliance.** The correct visual metaphor is a dog, lying on its back, wagging its tail, exposing its urine-soaked pink belly. When those cowards go to the camps, they'll no doubt motor there in their own cars. And they'll thoughtfully leave the keys in the ignition, I'll bet. (*"Do take care, Officer – the tyres are a bit thin! Oh, and she's low on petrol. Here's a tenner to see you home. Cheerio!"*)

"Civil society" indeed.

Folks, don't be fooled. It all boils down to the same thing: a *gun ban*. Yesterday, the full-auto M16. Today, the semi-auto AR15. Tomorrow, the scoped "*sniper*" rifle. Next week, the skeet shotgun. Next month, the fixed-blade knife. This is nothing new; history is merely repeating itself:

The people of the various provinces are strictly forbidden to have in their possession any swords, short swords ("sawed off" swords?), bows, spears, firearms, or other

*types of arms. **The possession of unnecessary implements** (without legitimate "sporting purpose" ?) **makes difficult the collection of taxes and dues, and tends to foment uprisings.***

– shogun Hideyoshi Toyotomi (1536-1598)
8th day of the 7th month, Tensho 16

Oh, 16th Century feudal Japan is not an appropriate example? Well, victim disarmament has a long history in America:

That no negro or other slave within this province shall be permitted to carry any gun, or any other offensive weapon, from off their master's land, without license from their said master; and if any negro or other slave shall presume to do so, he shall be liable to be carried before a justice of the peace, and be whipped, and his gun or other offensive weapon shall be forfeited to him that shall seize the same and carry such negro so offending before a justice of the peace.

– Chapter XLIV, Section XXXII, Maryland Acts of 1715

Nice incentive program for police; the arresting officer got to keep the slave's confiscated weapon. (*Hmmm*, sounds similar to civil forfeitures under our so-called "War On Drugs.")

One hundred and fifty years later, black Civil War veterans (two-thirds of whom were freed slaves) were "*full of the impudent notions of a freeman*," thus forbidden to own weapons. Today, we're *all* slaves – regardless of skin color. Government is our "*said master*," trying to require a "*license*."

"*Gee, Boston, 'slaves' is a extreme. How can Americans, living in the freest country in the world, be 'slaves' ?*" We don't even enjoy the liberty of *serfs*. (A serf paid "only" 25% of his earnings to his feudal lord. How much income tax do *you* pay?) Don't kid yourselves, we're slaves. Slaves with weekends off.

But we're *armed* slaves. "*Master*" forgot to disarm us. Oh, the *NFA34* and the *GCA68* and the "*Crime Bill*" have been a pain, but they haven't really disarmed us. I can't easily (*i.e.*, legally) own an M2 .50BMG or an M16. *Boo, hoo*. Between my FAL, AR15, Glock, and scoped bolt-action .308, I'll do just fine.

In response to the recent rash of police shootings of unarmed people (holding a wallet, fork, cell phone, etc.), here's a new insight from a professionally cretinous gunphobe:

*The problem – or a large part of it – is precisely that there are guns out there, by the thousands and the millions. **Police in other countries do not have to assume that anyone they question is likely to have a gun and likely to use it.** That is one of the many effects of our gun culture – that the guns are so plentiful they first terrorize*

the police, and then the police terrorize the citizenry. It is a vicious circle, of accelerating viciousness.

...[G]uns, by their very number and omnipresence, make people fearful, and fearful people act in dangerous ways.

The guns that gun cultists treat as sacred are the cause of a national sickness, one manifested in many ways, beginning with the vile rhetoric of the NRA.

– Gary Wills, "Police Brutality or Gun Brutality?"

31 March 2000, Univeral Press Syndicate

The statist haven't been able to disarm us because gun ownership is part of this nation's "DNA." Not only that, this right was *explicitly* protected in the Bill of Rights. Finally, more and more American gunowners are waking up to the gunhaters' end goal. They're seeing firsthand that registration is merely a cheap ploy for the hidden purpose of future confiscation (e.g., New York City), and they are now properly refusing to register their guns. (Registering guns is like sending a list of your household valuables to a burglars' guild. Why invite – *guarantee* – a visit?) So, the gunowners are becoming more resolute, and the gunhaters are growing more desperate. Schumer and all his little cockroach friends (my apologies to cockroaches) *know* what they've got planned for their unarmed America, but they're way behind in implementing it:

***That the United States was born out of an armed rebellion fueled, in large part, by resentment over excessive taxation is a bit of history that makes statist extremely uncomfortable.** It should, therefore, come as no surprise that congressmen and senators who dream of an ever-expanding welfare state consistently vote to restrict individual gun ownership or even ban the production of certain classes of firearms.*

*Claims by extremist groups such as Handgun Control, Inc. (HCI) that "just one more" gun law is necessary to "fight crime" or "reduce the level of violence" are simply a smoke screen. **HCI is run by statist whose objective is the total disarmament of ordinary people.** They are savvy political professionals with enormous patience who are willing to disarm you in increments, if need be. However long it takes, to HCI the best "gun control" is gun prohibition.*

*In the minds of people who promote the expansion of government power at the expense of individual liberty, gun prohibition makes perfect sense. **In fact, it is essential.** Middle class welfare programs (e.g., Medicare and Social Security) along with interest payments on the national debt currently consume more than half of all federal expenditures. It is only a matter of time, perhaps less than a decade, until "discretionary" spending on defense, law enforcement, parks, roads, etc. is relegated to less than one-third of the total. **Sooner or later something has got to give.** Either the federal welfare apparatus will have to shrink dramatically or taxes will have to go up. But what would happen if 50,000,000 Americans "just say no" to forking over more of their hard-earned money? **Massive civil disobedience by ordinary people who, if necessary, could defend themselves is a statist's worst nightmare.** On*

the other hand, the populace will be much easier to intimidate if it has already been disarmed.

Disarmament of people kept (or to be kept) in servitude has historical precedent dating back to ancient times. *The history of "gun control" in America shows that it has been used repeatedly as an authoritarian and elitist device to favor the powerful and politically well-connected and keep supposedly less worthy people "in their place."*

*"Gun control" in America has often meant gun prohibition for people who, because of their race, religion, ethnic origin, or condition of servitude, were considered a threat to those in power. As we enter the 21st Century, rates of taxation have reached oppressive levels. To statist (who seek only to expand government power), growing resentment on the part of people who work, produce wealth, and pay oppressive taxes presents a serious threat. **Disarming ordinary Americans who will be called upon to pay ever higher taxes is seen by them as necessary to minimize that threat.***

– Howard J. Fezell, Esq., "Early American 'Gun Control'"
www.2ndamendment.net/2amd8.html

Of course, our masters claim that victim disarmament is "*necessary*" to bring out a "*safe*" society (for them). Well, William Pitt and Thomas Jefferson disagree with the statist:

Necessity is the plea for every infringement of human freedom. It is the argument of tyrants; it is the creed of slaves.

– William Pitt, House of Commons, 18 November 1783

No free man shall ever be debarred the use of arms.

– Thomas Jefferson, Proposal for Virginia Constitution

I am a political dissident. (Given the atrocities of our times, every thinking American should be, too.) And I know what happens – what *always* has happened – to *unarmed* political dissidents. I will not stand in line for a cattle car aimed at some extermination camp. I will not be led blindfolded to a bullet-pocked brick wall.

"We have met the enemy, and the enemy is us." There are no liberating forces on the horizon. We're on our own.

GUN LAWS IN THE 50 STATES & D.C.

While most Bill of Rights issues have been ironed out at the national level by the Supreme Court and applied to the 50 States (e.g., search and seizure, due process, etc.), the Court has studiously *avoided* so applying the *2nd* Amendment. Therefore, gunowners have no local 2nd Amendment protection and are at the legislative mercy of their State, if not their county or city. This foments random peril for any traveling gunowner:

A businessman from North Carolina was traveling to Maine via New Jersey when he was stopped by a New Jersey state trooper for a speeding violation. During the routine questioning, the trooper asked the North Carolina man if he had any firearms in the vehicle.

(The correct answer is *always* "No." I cannot conceive of a single instance when admitting to a cased, locked weapon would be to the gunowner's advantage. Properly secured, a cop would need "*probable cause*" (PC) to search the container. With or without righteous PC, any such search (which would be rare) could be later challenged by your lawyer.)

Having a concealed carry permit from North Carolina, the traveler assumed he was operating well within the law. He told the trooper that he had a Glock 19...in his briefcase which he was licensed to carry and would...allow the trooper to inspect it.

(Not only did he "*assume*" that he was within the law, he assumed that the trooper was reasonable. Few cops are these days,

especially state troopers in the East. The traveler from North Carolina is about to have a Reality Check.)

Before the traveler could utter another word, the trooper had drawn his sidearm, pointed it at the traveler and begun shouting at the man to exit the vehicle at once with his hands in the air. The stunned businessman, who had never had so much as a parking ticket, did as the officer demanded. He soon found himself spread eagle on the ground while the agitated trooper called for assistance. ...[T]he traveler was charged with a felony and spent three days in a Newark jail. ...[T]he felony charge was pled down to a misdemeanor. However, if the traveler had not possessed such an exemplary prior record, he may have faced the original felony and prison time. (at 1)

– J. Scott Kappas, Esq.

Traveler's Guide to the Firearm Laws of the Fifty States

Attorney Kappas has provided us with a unique and fairly comprehensive manual for understanding the myriad gun laws. Call 606-647-5100 to order it, or get it from a gun store for \$13. The *Guide* is, however, unevenly written, weakly organized, and poorly typeset. No table matrix is given. Its 0-100% ranking system is unexplained in its subjectivity. In short, it is not very user friendly. This chapter supplements the *Guide*.

While I gleaned heavily from the *Guide* and table summarized its info (which is likely sufficient for most readers), consult the *Guide* and/or your lawyer and/or the State AG if you've any further questions. **Visit www.packing.org for CCW updates.**

[The McClure-Volkmer Act of 1986](#)

This bill will remove bad laws that were passed during a period of hysteria.

– President Ronald Reagan, 19 May 1986

The so-called *Firearms Owner's Protection Act* amended the *GCA68*. It did two good things: It eliminated the interstate commerce restrictions on ammo sales. (No more ridiculous retail recordkeeping!) It also created a federal "umbrella" for interstate gunowners in transit. If you are legal where you live and where you are going, States in between (such as Neu Jersey) can't arrest you if your guns are unloaded and cased.

It did, *however*, do one very bad thing. Snuck in during the last seconds of debate by a career gun bigot from NJ was an

amendment to prohibit after 19 May 1986 further manufacture or conversion of full-auto weapons. (Within a month, *NFA* manufacturers, working frantically, increased the National Registry numbers from 90,000 to 190,000.)

No firearms rights in State Constitution

CA IA MD MN NJ NY WI

Transfer record?

no record for guns	AK AZ AR CO DE FL GA ID KS KY LA ME MS MT NE NV NM OK TX UT VT WV WY
record required in cities	OH VA
required record for guns	AL CA CT DC HI IL IN IA MD MA MI MN MO NH NJ NY NC ND OR PA RI SC SD TN WA WI

Purchase, importation, or ownership

Handguns

unrestricted	AL AK AZ CA CO CT DE FL GA ID IN KS KY LA ME MD MS MT NE NV NH NM ND OH OK OR PA RI SC SD TN TX UT VT WA WV WI WY
permit required banned after-_____	HI IA IL MA MI MN MO NJ NY NC VA DC-1975

Long guns

unrestricted	AL AK AZ CA CO CT DE FL GA ID IN IA KS KY LA ME MD MI MN MS MO MT NE NV NH NM NY NC ND OH OK OR PA RI SC SD TN TX UT VT VA WA WV WI WY
permit required	DC HI IL MA NJ

"assault weapons"

unrestricted	AL AK AZ CO DE FL GA ID IN IA KS KY LA ME MD MI MS MO MT NE NV NH NM NY NC ND OK OR PA RI SC SD TN TX UT VT VA WA WV WI WY
permit required	HI IL MA MN
city permit required	OH
banned after-_____	CT-1997?
totally forbidden	CA DC NJ

NFA34 weapons

unrestricted	AL AK AZ CO FL GA ID IN KY ME MD MS MT NE NV NH NM ND OH OK OR PA SD TN TX UT VT VA WV WI WY
"curios or relics" only	MN MO
restricted to "war relics"	LA
C&R and Class III licensees	MI
permit required	AR CT MA
with local sheriff's permission	NC
banned after-_____	CT-?
totally forbidden	CA DE DC HI IL IA KS NJ NY RI SC WA

On foot carry

Handguns

open, loaded, anywhere*	ID KY LA NM NC SD VT WY
open, loaded, unless locally prohibited	AL AK AZ CO DE KS ME MI MS MO MT NE NV NH OH OK OR PA VA WI
open, loaded in rural areas only	CA WA WV
open, loaded for licensed hunting/fishing	AR GA MN UT
open, unloaded	ND
open forbidden	CT FL HI IL IN IA MD MA NJ NY RI SC TN TX
concealed, no license required	VT
concealed, no license in rural areas	ID MT
concealed, license required	AL AK AZ CA CO CT DE FL GA ID IN IA KY LA ME MD MA MI MN MS MT NH NJ NY NC OK OR RI SD TN VA WA WV WY
concealed, with affirmative defense	MS MO NE OH
concealed, unloaded	NM
concealed not at all possible	DC HI IL KS WI

Long guns

open, loaded anywhere*	GA ID IN KY LA NV NM NC TX VT WI WY
open, loaded, unless locally prohibited	AL AK AZ CO DE KS ME MI MS MO MT NE OH OK OR PA SD VA CA IA WA
open, loaded in rural areas only	MN UT WV
open, loaded, for hunting, etc., only	ND
open, unloaded	CT DC FL HI IL MD MA NJ NY RI
open forbidden	SC TN UT

Vehicle carry

Handguns

open, loaded	AK AZ DE FL GA ID KS KY LA MS MT NV NM NC VT WY
open, loaded, unless locally prohibited	CO MO NE OR
open, chamber and mag empty	ME NH OK UT VA
open forbidden	AL AR CA CT DC HI IL IN IA MD MA MI MN NJ NY ND OH PA RI SC SD TN TX WA WV WI
concealed, no license required	VT MS NM
loaded in glove box O.K. w/o license	AK AZ FL GA KS KY LA NV SC
concealed, loaded, license required	AL AK AZ AR CA CO CT DE FL MN ID IN IA KY LA ME MD MA MI MT NV NH NJ NY NC ND OK OR PA RI SC SD TN TX UT VA WA WV WY
concealed, with affirmative defense	AR CO MO NE OH TX
concealed, unloaded in locked trunk/case	HI IL KS NE OH WI
locked in trunk only for passing through	NJ
concealed not at all possible	DC

Long guns

open, loaded	AZ FL ID KS KY LA MS MT NM NC SD TX WY
open, loaded, unless locally prohibited	MO OR
open, loaded (except during hunting season)	AR
open, chamber empty	CO NV ND
open, chamber and mag empty	AL AK DE ME MD NE NH OK VT VA
open forbidden	AL CA DC HI MN NY OH PA RI TN WV WI
concealed, loaded, no license required	MS NM SD
concealed, loaded, in rural areas only	MT
concealed, unloaded	VT
concealed if unloaded in locked case	AL CA CO DE FL HI IL IN IA ME MD MA MI MN MT NV NH NY NC ND OH OK OR PA RI SC TN TX UT VA WA WV WI WY
locked in trunk only for passing through	CT NJ
concealed impossible	DC

Uniformity

Preemption of local laws by State

preemption strict – all local laws preempted by State	FL GA IA ID KY LA ME MI MN NM NC ND OK SC SD TN TX UT WA WY
preemption by judicial ruling	CT NJ NY
preemption general, but for local discharge ordinances	MD VT
preemption since-____; previous laws "grandfathered"	DE-1985 IN-1995 NV-1989 VA-1987 WV-1999
preemption softened by court	AZ
preemption, except for handguns or certain places	AL MS MO MT OR
preemption, except for large cities	PA
preemption only with State legislature concurrence	MA
preemption general, but for certain areas (call AG)	AR
preemption, but State laws are draconian anyway	CA RI WI

No preemption of local laws

no preemption; local legislation possible, but infrequent	AK NH
no preemption; local legislation possible and common	CO HI IL KS NE NY OH VA
a moot point, since anything that shoots is restricted	DC MA NJ

Concealed handgun license

Issuance

none required; concealed carry without permit <i>"shall issue"</i>	VT AK AZ CO CT FL ID IN KY LA ME MN MS MT NV NH NC ND NM OK OR PA SC SD TN TX UT VA WA WV WY AL AR DE GA MI
discretionary and common issued (States in bold are nearly <i>"shall issue"</i>)	
discretionary and rarely issued	CA HI IA MD MA NJ NY RI
often issued to nonresident Americans	AZ FL ME NH PA UT WA
rarely issued to nonresident Americans	IA NJ OR
none offered	DC IL KS MO NE OH WI

CHL reciprocity (visit www.packing.org for current info)

automatic for all State permits	ID IN KY MI VT WY
for States with like standards (call AG)	AK AZ LA MT OK PA SC TN TX UT
for mutually recognized States (call AG)	AR FL GA NH ND WV
for identical standards <i>and</i> mutuality	MS VA
automatic, for vehicle carry only	PA RI
<i>ad hoc</i> for recognized firearms competitions	CT
highly discretionary (call AG)	MA
none	AL CA CO DE DC HI IL IA KS ME MD MN MO NE NV NJ NM NY NC OH OR SD WA WI

RANKING THE STATES & D.C.

I scored them on 10 criteria, rated 0-10 (worst to best):

- 1) Private sale record required?
- Purchase of: 2) handguns 3) long guns 4) "*assault weapons*"
- 5) On foot open carry
- 6) Car open carry
- 7) Uniformity
- 8) Concealed carry
- 9) CHL issuance
- 10) CHL reciprocity

How my scoring differed from Kappas Guide

First of all, he did not take into account what I consider a crucial concern – recordfree private sales. No government should know which citizens are buying which guns, as no government can be *trusted* with such information.

Secondly, I consider respecting the right to open carry not only important, but highly indicative of a State's overall attitude towards gun ownership.

Lastly, I did not take into account one of his variables: the unrestricted ownership of full-auto weapons. Since it goes against my grain to get licensed for *anything*, Class 3 firearms are not my bag. I also believe that such privileged ownership is soon to be revoked, possibly within 10 years.

So, my State scoring was stricter than that of Mr. Kappas, usually by 10-15 points and often 22-27 points. Still, there is a very strong correlation between our scores.

BOSTON T. PARTY'S RANKINGS

1) Private sale record? Purchase of: 2) handguns 3) long guns
 4)"assault weapons") 5) On foot open carry 6) Car open carry 7)
 Uniformity 8) Concealed carry 9) CHL issuance 10) CHL reciprocity

	1)	2)	3)	4)	5)	6)	7)	8)	9)	10)	100%
AL	0	10	10	10	8	0	8	3	5	0	54
AK	10	10	10	10	9	10	5	10	10	10	94
AZ	10	10	10	10	9	10	8	6	10	8	91
AR	10	10	10	10	5	0	7	3	5	8	88
CA	0	10	10	0	5	0	2	1	2	0	30
CO	10	10	10	10	8	9	5	7	10	8	85
CT	0	10	10	2	0	0	2	3	9	1	37
DE	10	10	10	10	8	10	5	1	5	0	89
DC	0	0	2	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	2
FL	10	10	10	10	0	10	10	7	10	8	83
GA	10	10	10	10	5	10	10	6	7	8	84
HI	0	5	5	5	0	0	0	0	1	0	18
ID	10	10	10	10	10	10	10	7	10	10	97
IL	0	5	5	5	0	0	0	0	0	0	15
IN	0	10	10	10	0	0	5	5	10	10	80
IA	10	5	10	10	0	0	10	2	6	0	53
KS	10	10	10	10	8	10	8	4	0	0	88
KY	10	10	10	10	10	10	10	7	10	10	97
LA	10	10	10	10	10	10	10	7	9	8	94
ME	10	10	10	10	8	2	10	3	10	0	73
MD	0	10	10	10	0	0	9	0	2	0	41
MA	0	5	5	5	0	0	0	0	1	1	17
MI	0	5	10	10	8	0	10	2	5	10	80
MN	0	5	10	5	5	0	10	7	10	8	58
MS	10	10	10	10	8	10	8	8	9	4	85
MO	0	5	10	10	8	8	8	2	0	0	51
MT	10	10	10	10	9	10	8	7	9	8	92
NE	10	10	10	10	8	8	5	3	0	0	64
NV	10	10	10	10	8	10	5	4	9	0	76
NH	0	10	10	10	8	2	7	5	10	6	68
NJ	0	5	5	0	0	0	0	0	1	0	11
NM	10	10	10	10	10	10	10	7	10	0	87
NY	0	5	10	10	0	0	0	0	1	0	26
NC	0	5	10	10	10	10	10	2	9	0	66
ND	0	10	10	10	3	0	10	3	9	6	61
OH	5	10	10	7	8	0	5	2	0	0	47
OK	10	10	10	10	8	2	10	3	9	8	80
OR	0	10	10	10	8	8	8	2	9	0	65
PA	0	10	10	10	8	0	6	3	10	4	61
RI	0	10	10	10	0	0	10	0	1	4	45
SC	0	10	10	10	0	0	10	7	9	8	64
SD	0	10	10	10	10	5	10	5	9	0	69
TN	0	10	10	10	0	0	10	3	9	8	60
TX	10	10	10	10	5	5	10	6	9	7	82
UT	10	10	10	10	5	0	10	3	10	8	76
VT	10	10	10	10	10	10	9	10	10	10	99
VA	5	5	10	10	8	2	5	3	9	4	61
WA	0	10	10	10	5	0	10	2	10	0	57
WV	10	10	10	10	5	0	5	2	9	0	61
WI	0	10	10	10	8	0	10	0	0	0	48
WY	10	10	10	10	10	10	10	4	9	10	93

What a range, from 2% (D.C.) to 99% (Vermont)! Half the States are at least "tolerable." Two-thirds are in the South and West. Three are each in the Midwest and East.

95+	Slices of Heaven	VT ID KY
85-94	Havens	LA AK WY MT AZ AK MS CO
75-84	Quite Comfortable	GA TX FL OK NM NV UT
65-74	Tolerable	ME DE SD KS NH AR NC OR

BTP #	BTP %	pop./mile²	<u>What's still needed there</u>	
1	Vermont	99	61	loaded car long guns
2	Idaho	97	12	Vermont conceal carry
3	Kentucky	97	93	Vermont conceal carry
4	Louisiana	94	97	Vermont conceal carry
5	Alaska	94	1	preemption
6	Wyoming	93	5	Vermont conceal carry (got it!)
7	Montana	92	6	Vermont conceal carry
8	Arizona	91	32	preemption; Vermont CC (got it!)
9	New Mexico	87	12	preemption; Vermont conceal carry
10	Mississippi	85	55	preemption; Vermont conceal carry
11	Colorado	85	32	preemption; Vermont conceal carry
12	Georgia	84	112	preemption; Vermont conceal carry
13	Florida	83	240	open carry; Vermont conceal carry
14	Texas	82	65	open carry; Vermont conceal carry
15	Oklahoma	80	46	car open carry; Vermont carry
16	Nevada	76	11	preemption; reciprocity
17	Utah	76	21	on foot and car open carry;
18	Maine	73	40	car open carry; reciprocity
19	Delaware	69	341	preemption; "shall issue"; reciprocity
20	S. Dakota	69	9	record-free transfers; car open carry
21	Kansas	68	30	"shall issue"; reciprocity
22	N. Hampshire	68	124	no records; car carry; "shall issue"
23	Arkansas	66	45	car open carry; "shall issue"
24	N. Carolina	66	136	no records or handgun permit; reciproc.
25	Oregon	65	30	no records or handgun permit; reciproc.
	pop./mile ² average	47		(i.e., fewer people equals more freedom)

The "Top 10" Losers

42	Ohio	47	265	
43	Maryland	41	489	"Where no one can hear you scream."
44	Connecticut	37	678	Constitution State?
45	California	30	191	Settled by freedom-seeking pioneers?
46	New York	26	381	Fought for by Minutemen?
47	Mass.	17	768	Birthplace of the American Revolution?
48	Hawaii	16	173	Now owned by the anti-gun Japanese
49	Illinois	15	206	Land of Lincoln?
50	New Jersey	11	1,042	Consecrated by blood of 1770s Patriots?
51	D.C.	2	9,949	One can own (disassembled) long guns
	pop./mile ² average		466	(not including D.C.)
	pop./mile ² average		1,414	(including D.C.)

State

Alabama	AL
Alaska	AK
Arizona	AZ
Arkansas	AR
California	CA
Colorado	CO
Connecticut	CT
Delaware	DE
D. of C.	DC
Florida	FL
Georgia	GA
Hawaii	HI
Idaho	ID
Illinois	IL
Indiana	IN
Iowa	IA
Kansas	KS
Kentucky	KY
Louisiana	LA
Maine	ME
Maryland	MD
Massachusetts	MA
Michigan	MI
Minnesota	MN
Mississippi	MS
Missouri	MO

Attorney General

334-242-7300
907-465-3600
602-542-4266
501-682-2007
916-324-5437
303-866-3052
860-808-5318
302-577-8400
202-727-6284
850-488-5381
404-656-4585
808-586-1282
208-334-2400
312-814-2503
317-232-6201
515-281-3053
785-296-2215
502-696-5300
225-342-7013
207-626-8800
410-576-6300
617-727-2200
517-373-1110
651-296-6196
601-359-3692
573-751-3321

Montana	MT	406-444-2026
Nebraska	NE	402-471-2682
Nevada	NV	775-684-1100
N. Hampshire	NH	603-271-3658
N. Jersey	NJ	609-984-9579
N. Mexico	NM	505-827-6000
N. York	NY	212-416-8519
N. Carolina	NC	919-716-6400
N. Dakota	ND	701-328-2210
Ohio	OH	614-466-3376
Oklahoma	OK	405-521-3921
Oregon	OR	503-378-6002
Pennsylvania	PA	717-783-9995
Rhode Island	RI	401-274-4400
S. Carolina	SC	803-734-3970
S. Dakota	SD	605-773-3215
Tennessee	TN	615-741-3491
Texas	TX	512-463-2191
Utah	UT	801-538-1326
Vermont	VT	802-828-3171
Virginia	VA	804-786-2071
Washington	WA	360-753-6200
W. Virginia	WV	304-558-2021
Wisconsin	WI	608-266-1221
Wyoming	WY	307-777-7841

CANADA

All handguns and semi-auto military-pattern long guns are prohibited. If you get caught, your weapons will be confiscated, your vehicle may be impounded, and you could face prosecution under Canadian law. Have a nice day, eh?

There is no legal concealed carry. Disgusting.

The only firearms allowed entry are "*regular sporting rifles or shotguns with barrels over 18.5 inches and longer than 26 inches in overall length.*" As self-defense is *not* considered a legitimate reason for gun importation, the only "correct" reasons are hunting or officially-sanctioned target shoots. Putrescent.

Until 31 December 2000 no permit was required, but now you have to cough up \$50 for a declaration permit. (Call 800-731-4000 for more information.)

MEXICO

While special permits may be wrangled for hunting rifles (call the consulate at 202-736-1000 for more info), anything else is *prohibita*. Unless you're willing and able to shoot your way out of any potential arrest, don't take in firearms or ammo.

WHAT ABOUT OTHER COUNTRIES?

From what I've heard and read, there are only a few foreign countries which even somewhat recognize one's right to keep and bear arms: Bolivia (no laws!), Crete (*de facto* free), Czech Republic, Finland (5m people; 4m guns), Israel, Norway, Poland, and Switzerland.

Ragnar Benson is researching a book on this very subject, so keep your eye out for it.

CONCLUSION

As restricted as firearms are in much of the USA, this is still the best country in the world for gunowners. *So far...*

CREEPING CITIZEN DISARMAMENT

For several reasons, the freedom-hating gunphobes cannot pass (much less enforce) an outright national ban and confiscation program for all firearms.

Gun ownership is supported by about two-thirds of Americans. About 1 out of 2 households own a gun. 27 States now enjoy "*shall issue*" concealed carry permits, 4 States still use discretionary (though fairly reasonable) systems, and Vermont has never required a permit. Meaning, in 32 States (64%) is it not only possible for sane, non-felon adults to legally carry for protection, it's socially *acceptable*. Handgun ownership is growing (especially amongst women).

Translation: **We are *winning* the conceptual battle for practical self-defense.** The next phases should be automatic CHL reciprocity, and then national Vermont-style carry. Then, we can seek the repeal of the "*Crime Bill*" and the 1990 import ban and the *GCA68*. With the right Supreme Court victory, perhaps even the *NFA34* will be struck down.

Military-style rifles, however, seem to be slowly losing mass acceptance. While most Americans can understand the need for a handgun to protect against criminals, they have yet to realize the need for an FAL or H&K91 or M1A to protect against *government*. And they won't likely make that leap unless government oppression

becomes (or at least seems) *personal*, just like street crime did. Except for a few major gaffes like Ruby Ridge and Waco, the USG has generally kept its systemic oppression to somewhat muted levels and thus has not terribly alarmed the general public. While the feds have inexorably been erasing bits of liberty, they are far too impatient to remove the entire edifice brick by brick. At some point, they will have to employ the wrecking ball, if not dynamite.

This is particularly true in the matter of eliminating residual *de facto* 2nd Amendment enjoyment. As you'll see from the table on page 7, they have few remaining "easy squares" to fill in relating to equipment not widely enjoyed by gunowners. Examples of these are .50BMG rifles, NVDs, laser sights, bulletproof vests, and possibly even semi-auto battle rifles. Banning the importation and domestic manufacture of such would likely be their last bloodless victory.

Eventually, they'll have to bring out the wrecking ball of mandatory registration. Registration is a prerequisite to their *real* goals. Without full registration, they cannot fully enforce a ban on private transfers in those 23 States which require no records. Without registration, no coercive buy-up scheme (like Britain's) would have any leverage. Without registration, they cannot force a national confiscation.

If we successfully thwart registration, then they will have only two alternatives: **Give up, or up the ante.** By "up the ante" I mean proceed directly to a ban and confiscation (which will undoubtedly be a monumental catalyst for citizen reaction).

The reason why gun bans in their areas have *not* caused mass uprisings is that affected gunowners can simply *move* to another State. As Chapter 34 showed, gunowners have 25 States which range from Tolerable to Slices of Heaven. The gunowning *diaspora* can choose from Alaska, 9 Western States, 3 in the Midwest, 8 Southern ones, and even 3 in the East. Most are within a day's move from any gun-hating State. (Kalifornia, for example, has lost many thousands of productive gunowners to Oregon, Nevada, and Arizona.) Accomplishing a national citizenry disarmament through the States has achieved only a 50% moderate success and such clearly cannot be counted on for more than 65-70%. (At least 15 States will *really* dig in on the 2nd Amendment from here on.)

Anti-gun bigots will thus have to attack the very foundation of it all: the 2nd Amendment itself.

[Repealing the 2nd Amendment](#)

Since State-level gun restrictions can only go so far, the freedom-haters are now talking about legislative amputation:

*Gun control advocates...should squarely face the need to decon-stitutionalize the subject **by repealing the embarrassing Second Amendment.***

– George F. Will, 21 March 1991

*There is no reason for anyone in this country, anyone except a police officer or a military person, to buy, to own, to have, to use, a handgun...The only way to control handgun use in this country is to prohibit the guns. **And the only way to do that is to change the Constitution.*** (From the guy who faked those pick-up explosions.)

– NBC News President Michael Gartner
USA Today, 16 January 1992

*The truth about the Second Amendment is something that liberals cannot bear to admit: The right wing is right. The amendment does confer an individual right to bear arms, **and its very presence makes effective gun control in this country all but impossible.***

So why must we subordinate ourselves to a 208-year old law that, if the latest scholarship is correct, is contrary to what the democratic majority believes is in its best interest?... They (the Founding Fathers) are dead and buried and will not be around to suffer the consequences. We the living will.

– Daniel Lazare, "Your Constitution Is Killing You" *Harper's Magazine*, October 1999

Going through the State legislatures

Technically, Congress must successfully propose such a constitutional amendment and the President must sign it. Then it is sent out to the 50 States where at least three-fourths of their legislatures must ratify it. Meaning, as few as 13 States (with as little as 4.5% of the population) can prevent its ratification. We certainly have those numbers (and more), and will continue to have them for at least another generation.

Thus, I do not see a proposed repeal likely to succeed, though they may indeed try. Such a naked attempt would likely galvanize into action many of the fence-sitting gunowners.

Calling for a Con-Con

When two-thirds (34) of the States call for a constitutional convention, the entire Constitution is up for grabs. Two sly attempts were made since the mid-1980s. The first was a wholly needless Con-Con to pass a Balanced Budget Amendment.

The second was the trick of Utah Governor Leavitt calling for a "town meeting" of the States to discuss issues of federalism. Thanks to quick action by Patriots and Conservatives through the Net, faxes, and newsletters, the public quickly got wind of this scheme in time to voice sufficient outrage.

Leavitt was quite floored with the negative reaction and weakly countered that –*My goodness!* – they weren't trying for a Con-Con, and even if they were they would *never* tamper with the Bill of Rights, and even if they *did* such must be ratified by at least three-fourths of States.

The People, however, understood that it's far better to keep the wolf *outside*, rather than to let him in (trusting him to never get hungry, or if he did, to never eat you).

While I don't discount future attempts at a Con-Con, it's a "hair-trigger" issue for too many Americans to easily succeed.

The gunphobes' best chance to get the 2nd Amendment actually repealed through constitutional procedure lies in the use of State conventions.

Going through *ad hoc* State conventions

... , or by conventions in three fourths thereof, as the one or the other mode of ratification may be proposed by the Congress;...

– Article V; *The Constitution for the United States of America*

This succeeded in 1787-88 when the proposed Constitution sent itself (through Article VII) to State *conventions* and not to the legislatures (which were understandably hostile to relinquishing their State's autonomy). The Federalists skillfully packed enough of these conventions with enough of their people for the Constitution to squeak by.

In my studied opinion, a repeat of this offers the most hope to the gunphobes, and thus we should anticipate it.

In *Hologram of Liberty* I postulated that Con-Con conventioners, mindful of their treason, would "meet" in cyberspace

to avoid receiving rifle fire had they met at a hall. The State conventioners might also resort to such a security measure.

I certainly am *not* advocating the Federal crime of terrorism, which is (according to Public Law 104-132, Title VII, Section 702(g) (5)(A)) an offense that "*is calculated to influence or affect the conduct of government by intimidation or coercion, or to retaliate against government conduct.*" I am merely discussing possible actions/reactions within theoretical scenarios.

Repeal of the 2nd Amendment or not, the gun-haters have no conceptual choice but a *national* ban and confiscation.

A national ban and confiscation

The illegal we can do immediately; the unconstitutional takes a little longer.

– Henry Kissinger (He would know...)

A *national* ban does not leave us with the viable response of moving. There are very few other countries which would welcome American gunowners and their hardware, and even if there were, the only practical way to relocate would be to *sail* there (as we would not be permitted to fly out with our FALs). How many of you have access to ocean-going craft?

Translation: It would be far "easier" to simply remain in the USA and finally fight for our liberty.

Any national ban would result in massive noncompliance

If historical noncompliance examples of the *NFA34* and the "*assault weapons*" bans of NYC and New Jersey and California hold true, under 5% would voluntarily register their guns.

Going house-to-house would be a meat-grinder

Without a registration data list, limited enforcement police would not have the numbers to go house-to-house. Only an *army* conceivably has those numbers, and such has only succeeded when the population were only *very* lightly armed (*e.g.*, Haiti and Panama). When even mildly armed (*e.g.*, Somalia), gun stealing troops got waxed and quickly left.

The rifle "cat" is out of the victim disarmament "bag"!

As Afghanistan proved, the *real* danger to any oppressive government is the widespread citizen ownership of centerfire rifles. As I earlier wrote, while a handgun can protect your life, only a powerful *rifle* (*i.e.*, an MBR) can defend your *Liberty*. No wars, not even guerrilla wars, have ever been won with pistols. If you're serious about staying free, then get an MBR and become "one" with it – *quickly*.

It doesn't even have to be a .308 battle rifle, although such is certainly the tool of choice. A bunch of hicks with mere lever-action .30-30s could probably prevail against a modern army using .223s. As long as the rifle is in a common cartridge with muzzle energy of at least 1700fpe and is accurate to at least 3MOA, then it's probably capable enough.

One possible disarmament timetable

6/34	NFA34	National Firearms Act of 1934	(mid-term Roosevelt)
6/68	GCA68	Gun Control Act of 1968	(lame duck Johnson)
5/86	MV86	McClure-Volkmer Act of 1986	(lame duck Reagan)
11/90	IB90	Import Ban of 1990	(mid-term Bush)
11/93	BB93	Brady Bill of 1993	(congress mid-term)
9/94	CB94	"Crime Bill" of 1994	(mid-term Clinton)

presidential lame-duck (2004-05, 2008-09)

New executive orders or bill signings would be quite possible (*e.g.*, sweeping import bans of mag-fed SLRs and AP ammo). Also, a President's *second* (*i.e.*, final) term is a lame-duck 4 years, in which he has no political accountability.

congressional lame-duck (2002-03, 2004-05)

If a large number of liberal congressmen were voted out of office, they could pass draconian gun laws before January.

just after congressional elections (2002, 04, 06, 08, 10)

A new (or reelected) Congress could flex its muscles with sweeping anti-gun legislation. The 11/90 import ban of military SLRs was the prime example (and during Bush's mid-term).

just after presidential elections (2005, 09)

While this has not been used before, if a Democratic President were elected in 2004 to take office with a liberal Congress, then early 2005 could see disastrous new controls.

presidential mid-term (2006-07, 2010-11)

An arrogant Congress and Clinton tried this with their 9/94 "*Crime Bill*" only to result in the "Republican Revolution" just months later in November. Presidential mid-term years can be *election* years for Congress, thus it's best to wait until *after* the congressional elections (e.g., the 11/90 import ban).

MANDATORY REGISTRATION

While the feds can probably get away with import and domestic manufacture bans of mag-fed SLRs, and even *NFA34* classification of .50BMG rifles – mandatory registration of household firearms is the brick wall that will prove unclimbable and unbreakable. Not even the NRA will likely budge on registration. Registration has indisputably been proven to be a mere stepping stone to the *real* goal of confiscation, and the public is quickly realizing this. So, I think the gunhaters will try to *avoid* the "Maginot Line" of gun registration in one of two ways.

a national firearms owner's card

Instead of registering guns, register their owners. After a national gun ban, "visit" everybody on the list to make sure that they've turned in all their guns.

The NICBC system is the first step in this goal. Even though approved records are required by law to be destroyed and not compiled, the FBI is ignoring this.

State CHLs are another form of gunowner registration, providing a list of high-level owners (*i.e.*, those who have the temerity to actually *carry* a handgun).

banning private gun sales

23 States do not require permits or records of private gun transfers. Few of those States will ever do so in the future, so a national ban is required to close that "*loophole*."

Given that all gun control laws since GCA68 have been (erroneously) based on the foreign/interstate commerce regulatory powers, it will prove difficult, if not impossible, to apply such to private gun sales (especially after **Lopez**). Banning private sales will probably only succeed if done by executive order.

However accomplished, a transfer ban would eliminate 85% of private sales (*e.g.*, gun shows, flea markets, classified ads, etc.). The 15% of residual, and suddenly illegal, private gun transfers would be "committed" by both the true criminal class and the newly

artificial *mala prohibita* "criminal" class (peaceably folks who sell amongst their trusted selves).

More importantly, a national ban on private sales would neatly bypass the brick wall of registration. Whether they would have the balls to actually pass and enforce a ban is another matter. (I suspect not.)

WATCH YOUR TONGUE!

As more and more anti-freedom laws are passed, gunowners will understandably and rightfully grow angrier. You may feel led to write your newspaper or even give a press interview. Fine, but do *not* admit to committing any crimes, don't promise to disobey any future gun laws, and don't bluster or threaten.

Remarks like *"Assault rifles are made to shoot gun-grabbing thugs, and I can't wait for the day when they try to take mine!"* are heartfelt, but stupid. At the least, the media gets its juicy soundbite; at the worst, you become a target for investigation (and possibly a raid). Instead, use counter-questions like:

"Everything criminal about guns and their use is already illegal."

"What does the government have planned for us that we must first be disarmed?"

"If the government's goals are harmless and will have the support of the people, then what's the problem with us remaining armed?"

"If so-called 'assault rifles' cause crime, then why does Switzerland not only allow, but require, all adult males to keep one at home?"

"Did Swiss Jews go to Hitler's death camps? No? Why not?"

"If Germany's Jews had owned guns to defend themselves, would there have been a holocaust?"

"Did you know the world's first gun registration was in the 1930s? In Nazi Germany?"

"Did you know that our federal Gun Control Act of 1968 came from the Nazis' gun control laws designed to disarm the Jews?"

"So, the central government wants to ban and confiscate guns from law-abiding Americans? Didn't they try that back in April of 1775?"

"So you're saying that the Minutemen of Lexington and Concord were wrong to resist their own disarmament by the British? So, you support the colonization of people against their will?"

"Don't you believe that good people have the right to protect themselves from the Bad Guys?"

*"Isn't government sometimes the Bad Guys? How about often?"
"Tell me again why the Swiss Jews didn't die in the holocaust?"*

How to deal with baited questions

If you're asked if you *personally* would ever use your guns to fight government confiscation, reply that it is your personal policy *not* to answer *hypothetical* questions, and leave it at that. If asked whether you own any "assault weapons," reply that all of your "household firearms" are perfectly lawful, and leave it that. If asked if you *daily* carry a gun with you, reply that such you couldn't say because no day is the same. You get the idea.

BANNING GUNS, AMMO, & GEAR

We've got a tidal wave of more "*gun control*" on the way, with the sequential goals of:

banning imports	(stop the flooding from outside)
banning domestic production	(stop the flooding from inside)
national registration	(identify the soaked areas)
banning private transfers	(prohibit water movement)
national confiscation	(blot with paper towels)

This has *already* happened in NYC and Neu Jersey. Visit www.gunowners.org and www.jpfo.org for the latest on the national level. (I *highly* recommend joining Gun Owners of America and the Jews for the Preservation of Firearms Ownership, the most effective gun rights lobby groups.)

Here's my forecast of what to expect, and in a logical sequence. (Remember, the enemy has to have a plan, and much of it can be inferred. Certain things are prerequisites for others, and some guns are more of a priority.) I think we have about 1-3 years before any registration attempts, and 2-4 years after that before they try confiscation. Post-2006 should be "fun."

semi-auto "assault weapons"

Instead of trying to close the "cosmetic loophole" (through which we can still buy new quasi-MBRs, American-made or not), all detachable mag semi-autos will eventually be banned from further importation and manufacture.

banning importation

Amazingly enough, it is 2005 and we can still buy FALs, H&K91s, AK47s, AK74s, and other foreign rifles (if the foreign parts count is 10 or less). Don't expect this fluke to last. All the President has to do

is sign an executive order (to fight terrorism, you see). If you haven't yet bought a parts kit, do so at once!

banning domestic manufacture

If not a total ban, than at least a ban of certain receivers, such as the AR15, M96, FAL, H&K91, SKS, and AK. Yes, folks will howl, but that's about it.

mandatory registration of "*assault weapons*"

Next will have to be some sort of registration (in order to provide for future transfer ban and then confiscation). Semi-auto mag-fed rifles will be transformed into quasi-Title II weapons. Kalifornia, Connecticut, Neu Jersey, and NYC have already done this. You'll have 30-90 days to register yours, or they're contraband. (In those Hitlerian states of Kalifornia and Neu Jersey, less than 3% have so far complied, so the "ball" is in the state governments' court. They'll need federal help.)

ban future transfers

Banning private sales might be achieved easily. Banning dealer transfers would be much more difficult, legally.

ownership ban and confiscation

Since probably less than 5% of the owners will have registered their rifles, a ban won't have much enforcement leverage. The raids are coming. It'll be interesting. I suspect that some (maybe many, but not most) people will resist and the state governors will declare martial law and cry to the feds.

"*high-capacity*" (i.e., *normal capacity*) mags

Although they've banned further imports, domestic manufacture is now again legal since the "*Crime Bill*" sunset. We've a miraculous window, and we should make great use of it.

Instead of reinstating the 10rd mag limit, they'll eventually ban *transfers* of mags. Since registration of mags is infeasible, a transfer ban will have to suffice until semi-auto possession is finally banned (after gun registration, of course).

However, going to that *next* step and declaring semi-autos contraband will *really* cross the line for many gunowners. Such a ban will overnight convert peaceable Americans into criminals. It is at that point when a true resistance movement will arise. Congress should thoroughly understand that first.

.50BMG rifles and ammo

These rifles are currently making the gun haters froth at their lying mouths. .50BMG target rifles have come under the recent attention of *CNN*, *The Wall Street Journal*, and other anti-self-defense megaphones. Since few of the public (gunowning or not) own or have even shot such a "*military heavy sniper rifle*" they are a potentially "easy" gun to attack. Fortunately, an intelligent and tight-knit .50BMG target shooting community (the Fifty Caliber Shooting Association, or FCSA) has firmly justified these rifles' "*sporting purpose*" and is poised to defend the tools of their sport.

It seems nearly inevitable, however, that these rifles will be soon restricted. (The precedent was established in 1994 by artificially declaring – without warning – USAS-12, Striker, and Street Sweeper shotguns to be "*destructive devices*.") Such is already a goal of the so-called "Violence Policy Center":

Bring heavy and intermediate sniper rifles under the control of the National Firearms Act.

– www.vpc.org/studies/sniper.htm

Notice that they also mentioned "*intermediate*"? Such would likely mean any caliber between .308 and .50. The VPC also implied that the Branch Davidians used .50BMG rifles on the BATF, which is simply *untrue*. They also claim that there is enough sniper instructional material "*to roil troubled minds and teach home-grown terrorists or impressionable juveniles*." Further, the sniper subculture "*has a mordant appeal for unstable personalities*." Just so you know.

On 10 June 1999 Representatives Blagojevich, Waxman, and Norton introduced HR2127, the so-called "*Military Sniper Weapon Regulation Act of 1999*" which proposes to "*amend the Internal Revenue Code of 1986 to regulate certain 50 caliber sniper weapons*

in the same manner as machine guns and other firearms." Meaning, they'd become NFA34 "firearms."

The Congress finds that—

(1) certain firearms originally designed and built for use as long-range 50 caliber military sniper weapons are increasingly sold in the domestic civilian market;

(2) the intended use of these long-range firearms, and an increasing number of models derived directly from them, is the taking of human life and the destruction of materiel, including armored vehicles and such components of the national critical infrastructure as radars and microwave transmission devices; (Funny, I didn't see that in the brochures. BTP)

*(3) these firearms are neither designed nor used **in any significant number** (here is the new standard, apparently) for legitimate sporting or hunting purposes and are clearly distinguishable from rifles intended for sporting and hunting use; (This is horseshKt. They are only used for target sports and hunting! BTP)*

(4) extraordinarily destructive ammunition for these weapons, including armor-piercing and armor-piercing incendiary ammunition, is freely sold in interstate commerce; and

*(5) the virtually unrestricted availability of these firearms and ammunition, given the uses intended in their design and manufacture, **present a serious and substantial threat to the national security.***

They just had to throw in "*national security*" to get everyone all jittery. Now, after 9/11, they're claiming terrorists have them.

"armor piercing" ammo

The black-tipped AP .308, .30-06, etc. is destined to be banned, just like the so-called "*cop killer bullets*." Stock up.

most centerfire rifle ammo can perforate steel

Velocity is the key to penetration (ask any laser), and therefore *all* rifle ammo is somewhat "armor piercing" in a technical sense (though it's not designed to be). Pistol calibers pale in power and range compared to any centerfire rifle caliber. Expect Congress to realize this in a couple of years.

military rifle ammo

Meaning, 5.45x39, 5.56x45, 7.62x39, 7.62x51, 7.62x54R, .30-06, .303 British, etc. First, the import ban (which will be relatively easy to achieve). Chinese ammo has already been banned from further importation, so what's to stop Congress from cutting off the Russian, Czech, and South African stuff?

A ban on *domestic* production, however, will be *much* more difficult, so what they'll probably end up doing instead is banning sales to civilians and private transfers (figuring that we'll eventually exhaust our own supplies). They might later ban having more than, say, 1,000rds (to gauge public reaction).

detachable mag semi-auto rifles

These are *non grata* to the freedom haters. Since the post-1994 quasi-"*assault rifles*" (lacking only a flash suppressor or pistol grip) legally circumvent the ban, the gunhaters will have to restrict *all* mag-fed SLRs. Besides, the "*assault rifle*" cosmetic hysteria of 1994 was just a stepping stone, anyway.

Concentrate on owning rifles. Like the Afghans, if we're going to fight this thing, we'll win through the competent use of *rifles*. (60,000 dead Soviets can't be wrong.) Handguns are what you use to gain time and distance from your assailants to grab your rifle. You shouldn't be so close as handgun range to the enemy, anyway. Get a good .308 or .30-06 scoped bolt-action, a good .308 battle rifle, and *lots* of training ammo.

import ban

Easy to do and with little likely outrage (as few guns will be affected, such as the AK Hunter, etc.). In 1998 Clinton signed an executive order 120-day ban.

catching hunting semi-autos in the "*assault rifle*" net

Two major California gun stores (Turner's Outdoorsman and Trader Sports, Inc.) announced that they have indefinitely suspended the sale of semi-auto sporting rifles, such as the Remington 7400 and the Ruger Mini-14. The Kalifornia "*assault weapons*" ban is so vague that gun stores are not taking any chances with an overzealous interpretation regarding wholly cosmetic features.

"*As California goes, so goes the nation.*" Given that Kalifornia is the mortally wounded canary in the coal mine, anticipate more State-

level bans on military-pattern SLRs, which will eventually affect hunting and target rifles.

domestic production ban

Once foreign guns can no longer get in, they'll deal with domestic guns. This will be justified by their bleating "*Nobody needs a semi-auto rifle to hunt deer.*" Technically, that may be true, but the greater issue of gun rights will be lost in the noise.

Now it begins to get *difficult* for Congress, as they're messing with *American* jobs and companies. Congress nearly banned new domestic "*assault rifles*" in 1991 (including the Colt AR15), but didn't quite have the nerve.

Look, the congressional graffiti is on the wall already. You're supposed to shut up and pay up. Why's a good little slave like you wanting a nasty "*assault rifle*" anyway?

registration

Oh, how the fascists are licking their chops over this! Millions of military-pattern SLRs are out there in unknown hands, and it just drives them nuts. Still, registration will be very tough to pass, even for these guns.

banning transfers

As with "*high-capacity*" mags, they'll likely bypass registration and simply ban transfers until a possession ban.

possession ban

The gunhaters will have a conceptual snag on banning these: if such rifles are deemed "bad" later, sharp folks will ask why they weren't "bad" back in 1994 and banned along with their military "*assault rifle*" brethren.

shotgun slugs & slug barrels

Even though a 12 gauge 1oz slug at 1400fps gives only 3047fpe (equal to a .30-06), it is .729 and will likely come under scrutiny and get on the fast track for "*destructive device*" classification. Even a 20 gauge is .615 caliber. Stay tuned...

"sniper ammo"

This could come to mean anything Sarah Brady says it means. Basically, any centerfire hunting cartridge will qualify. Naturally, this will really anger the hunters.

"sniper rifles"

Trying to distinguish between hunting rifles and "*sniper rifles*" for regulation's sake is impossible, but that won't likely stop the gunphobes. Given how entrenched hunting is in America, they probably won't be able to pull it off. They'll start with the .50BMG rifles ("*military heavy sniper rifles*"). Then, they'll work down to the "*intermediate sniper rifles*" of .309-.499 calibers, and *that* will wake up America's riflemen! Few gunowners have a .50BMG, but *many* of them have an 8x57, .338WM, .35 Whelen, .45-70, etc.

mandatory registration

This will mean any centerfire rifle readily capable of accepting a telescopic sight – which means *all* of them.

The day some "Manchurian Candidate" (going through *Prozac* withdrawal) snipes somebody, rush out and stock up on scopes, mounts and rings for Rugers, Winchesters, Remingtons, AKs, SKSs, Mini-14s, AR15s, etc. You'll eventually be able to sell them for 2-3X times what you paid for them.

semi-auto handguns

Given the millions of recent CHL holders, an outright ban will be difficult, if not impossible. However, since these people are *already licensed*, registration (gun and/or owner) is a small and relatively painless conceptual step.

semi-auto centerfire long guns

For symmetry's sake, these will have to go, too. A .30-06 Browning BAR or Remington 7400 (or M1 Garand!) are powerful and accurate rifles with semi-auto firepower. While bans on importation

and domestic manufacture for civilians might go through, registration and possession ban won't. (Bummer for the gunhaters; most of the easily restricted guns have already been affected. Now, their road quickly grows steeply uphill!)

bulletproof vests

"*Only criminals are afraid of getting shot!*" will be the way the gun bigots try to demonize the civilian ownership of vests. We're already seeing an early wind of this with Stupak's HR1423, the "*Body Armor Restriction Act of 1999*," which would prohibit mail order sales to civilians.

Visit www.bulletproofme.com for updates on body armor.

night vision devices

They'll eventually have to get around to these. NVDs are one of the pieces of equipment which give the owner an order of magnitude increase in advantage. If you don't have a 3rd Gen American NVD, then get moving. Yeah, a pair of PVS-7Bs are \$2,300+, but what *cooler* thing could you buy for that money? It's dark 40% of the time, and without an NVD you're blind 40% of the time.

laser sights

Tactically, I won't really miss these (except for IR laser target designators), but a ban will make Congress feel good (and that's what is important).

pre-1899 guns

Guns made before 1899 are not federal "*firearms*" and thus transfer unregulated. As I earlier explained, some of these are perfectly viable weapons, such as the Turkish M93. All can be mail ordered without paperwork or license and delivered right to your door! Take advantage of this opportunity quickly.

reloading components

While guns can last for generations, ammo is used up quickly. Although 1,000rds sounds like a lot, a week of intensive shooting can easily go through that. Before ammo is taxed out of existence, or banned, you should have a lifetime's supply (at least for your most important guns). I'd rather be ammo-heavy than gun-heavy.

tagging gunpowder for detection and ID

A report was due on 30 September 1997 from a special panel which investigated whether tracers in gunpowder will:

- pose a risk to human life or safety;
- help law enforcement;
- harm the quality and performance of gunpowders;
- harm the environment;
- cost more than its worth.

In addition, the panel must have projected:

- the cost to make tagged powders;
- the cost to regulate the system;
- the costs and effects on the consumers;
- the effect on consumer demand for ammunition;
- how hard it'll be for "terrorists" to evade taggants;
- if taggants could be evaded by homemade powders.

*It would be an easy step to make taggants unavailable to anyone other than those four main manufacturers. Then, **perhaps as a condition for selling to government agencies**, [the federals could] require those manufacturers to stop selling to gun shops and the public, thus making ammunition unavailable to anyone outside of law enforcement.*

– from *Send in the Waco Killers* (1999), p.435

The moral is: Stock up on ammo and gunpowder *today*. You can't lose with highly versatile powders such as Unique, H335, IMR4320, and IMR4895. (If you have a pet load with VihtaVuori or something else a bit exotic, be sure to get plenty of that, too.) Get a lifetime supply for you, your family, your friends, and any future family and friends. **There's no such thing as too much ammo.** Remember, guns can last forever, but ammo is *quickly* used up. Have at least 5,000rds per handgun, 1,000rds per scoped rifle, and 10,000rds per battle rifle.

What you don't use, others will eagerly buy or trade from you, as most people will *not* have stocked enough. *Count* on it.

U.S. military wants tungsten-core ammo

Due to ostensible environmental concerns, the DoD is replacing lead core ammo with tungsten. Tungsten is much more expensive than lead, and its melting point is 10 times higher (so much more energy will be required for production).

Why not use *steel*? Because we *have* steel; we don't have tungsten. Well, who has the worlds' reserves of tungsten? China. Which nation poses the greatest strategic threat to America over the next generation? China. Incredible, isn't it?

If this switch happens, then our ammo will be next as the ecofas-cists take up a new banner for victim disarmament.

centerfire handguns

mandatory registration

After the 30-90 day window, they're contraband. All CHL holders will have their handgun tied to their Card. Can't buy ammo or parts for handguns without a Firearm Ownership Card. Ask any Massachusetts slave how this works.

centerfire rifles

Even bolt-action rifles somehow escaping the "*sniper rifle*" classification will be targeted. A .308 round delivers 2700fpe, regardless what kind of rifle fires it, SLR or not.

.22LR handguns

Handguns are concealable, and any handgun can take out an occupying soldier. .22LRs will at last be restricted.

shotguns

Yeah, sure, the trapshooters will complain, but so *what*? They kept quiet all this time because their \$6,000 Perazzis weren't affected, and now it's too late.

blackpowder guns

.22LR rifles

BB and pellet guns

"assault slingshots"

"assault blowguns"

"assault knives"

For the moment, this is all that the British can own. It's difficult to defend your right to keep and bear kitchen knives.

REGULATING ACTIVITIES

Many men are capable of dying on the barricades for a big issue, but few – very few – are able to resist the gray suction of small, unheralded, day-by-day surrenders.

– Ayn Rand, *The Ayn Rand Letter*, 22 May 1972

Eliminate gun show private sales

This could happen anytime (e.g., S.890 from Lieberman and McCain). Lots of pressure and hysteria over 9/11 will be brought to bear on this very issue. Of course they're not calling it a "ban," but closing the "loophole" by requiring NICBCs. If this is achieved it naturally won't stop a single crime, so next will be flea markets, then newspaper ads, etc. Buy now!

Quantity limitation on dealer purchases

Currently there is a "Twelve Is Enough" H.R.12 bill introduced by Charles Schumer (who else?) which would limit buyers to no more than one handgun per month. Since most of the public doesn't relate to a need (or simple desire) to own multiple handguns, this bill might go through. "*Why, anybody buying more than twelve pistols in a year must have criminal purposes!*" (That's like saying anybody who buys more than 12 gallons of gas per week must be an interstate drug smuggler.)

Outlawing privately-sold handguns

This will probably be the first private sale ban, followed by semiauto rifles. (This nearly happened in 1999.)

Outlawing private sales of all guns

Gun shows are almost totally free of state and federal regulation despite a 1993 federal investigation that found stolen military weapons being routinely sold at them. (Yeah, suuuure! BTP)

– 28 December 1997, *The Chicago Tribune*

In *Brady* \$200,000,000 was allocated annually to the Attorney General for a NICBC system online by 30 November 1998. This affects *all* dealer firearm transfers, not just handguns. (If you're ever questioned after a possession ban regarding the whereabouts of your papered gun, you can say that you needed the money and sold everything at a gun show to private buyers.)

In the 1998 edition of this book, I forecasted that once the NICBC system is in place that private (*i.e.*, non-dealer) gun sales and transfers will at last be prohibited. In the 23 states (mostly in the South and the West) which do *not* restrict private transfers, this will kill the gun show and classified ad sales. It's no accident; it was *meant* to do so.

After that, how can *strangers* network? How will you *trust* one another during a forbidden private sale? You *won't*, so the only people you'll be able to buy from or sell to without federal paperwork will be *reliable* friends, neighbors and relatives. Will they have *exactly* what you need in the future? *Doubtful*. **The odds are against an excess supply amongst your trusted people.** Can pressure be exerted on them to give up your name and inventory? *Absolutely*. Buy now, *privately and without paperwork*, while you still *can*.

Further reduce the number of FFLs

[A] purposeful campaign was launched to jack up the annual FFL fee and to require FFL holders to prove they had a permanent place of business, a fixed address, at which the main activity was a "commercial gun store." By the end of 1997, the federals had quickly succeeded in trimming the number of American FFL holders by two-thirds.

When was the last time you heard of a revenue agency complaining that too many people were paying their fees? Also, now that the ATF's "regulatory burden" has been reduced by two-thirds (soon to become 95 percent), has their budget been trimmed by two-thirds? *Ha!*

– Vin Suprynowicz, *Send in the Waco Killers* (1999), p. 364

Hound domestic gun makers out of business

Nuisance lawsuits have already affected Colt, Ruger, and Jennings. Force them out of business, or into being only government

contractors (read the S&W agreement). (Colt seems halfway there. Bill Ruger would love to be a government contractor, but the feds don't want his crappy guns.)

Gun-Free School Zone enforcement

Even though **Lopez** struck down the 1991 Act, it was brazenly repassed in 1997, and is just waiting for illegal enforcement. (Who are you going to complain *to*? The Supreme Court already ruled in your favor, but is being ignored!)

Credit goes to GOA for killing HB163 which would have given BATF agents power to stop vehicles and seize otherwise legally owned firearms that were in violation of the school zone ban. I expect that a near-future Supreme Court will expand the *Terry* doctrine to allow the full search of autos (including the trunk and locked containers) *without* probable cause. This is *de facto* practice in Neu Jersey. Done nationally by the BATF, this may indeed prove to be the spark of insurrection.

When the BATF and your local police set up checkpoints within 1,000' of schools to search for weapons, I expect some shooting incidents. **Folks, if we allow gun-search checkpoints, then we've *lost*.** Cordoned-off blocks and house-to-house searches will be next.

Restrict or abolish the "*licensed collectors*"

For just \$10/year you can become a "*licensed collector*" of "*curios and relics*" and legally avoid NICBCs and 4473s. As I covered in Chapter 29, many of these guns are very capable for self-defense (e.g., P35, P38, 1911, Win. pre-64 M70, .308 Indian Lee-Enfield, Russian SKS, M1 Garand, and FN49).

No purchase of gun stuff without Card

No more filling up a basket at WalMart and paying with cash. Your Firearm Ownership ID Card will have its bar code scanned and the Federal computers will instantly upgrade your known inventory. Purchase permission can be denied onsite if the transaction is

deemed "*suspicious or excessive.*" "*Gun-related items*" will include books, paramilitary gear, reloading equipment, holsters, mags, firing pins, etc.

Mandatory "*arsenal*" license and inspection

The BATF already requires an additional form for 2 or more handgun purchases within 5 days from the same FFL. Someday, anybody with more than 2 guns or 1,000rds of ammo has an "*arsenal*" and must be visited by BATF prior to getting a \$200 "*arsenal*" permit. Undeclared stuff will get you 10 years.

Severe regulation/closure of gun ranges

The EPA has already begun this tactic. Outdoor ranges are hassled over noise regulations, and indoor ranges are closed because of alleged lead pollution. If there's no public place to shoot, then we won't be able to sight-in and practice as easily. Shooting skills, like any other skills, erode from disuse.

Federal law banning the carrying of firearms

Senator Frank Lautenberg (D-NJ) proposed this in S.707, which would override state concealed-carry and open-carry laws. I warned you about precisely this in 1997 (*Bulletproof Privacy*; 14/2-3). It *will* happen someday, probably by UN resolution to give Congress its "*our hands are tied*" excuse. If you have a CCW permit your name will be on a handy list. Read my *Bulletproof Privacy* and disappear. Lock and load.

...but the federal judges should be able to conceal carry...

On 11 May 1999, HR1752, "*The Federal Courts Improvement Act of 1999*," was introduced by Berman (D-CA) and Coble (R-NC). Buried in this seemingly innocuous bill is language allowing federal judges, both current and retired, to conceal carry firearms, regardless of any state or local laws or regulations. The temerity is breathtaking.

You see, the federal judges want to be able to protect themselves from the very irate citizens they helped to disarm.

THE MANIA FOR "SMART GUNS"

"*Smart guns*" which can only be fired by their "*authorized user*" will allegedly reduce or eliminate the possibility of a child or a burglar using somebody else's gun. This idea is being championed by that ignorant class of pseudo-intellectuals with no concomitant Real World experience. They habitually gravitate to *prima facie* elegant technological "answers" to questions and issues too silly to deserve being taken seriously. (On this point, it's bitterly ironic that the same pansy liberals who so strongly objected to SDI – Reagan's "Star Wars" anti-ICBM system – as being a technological pipe dream, are the same ones so revoltingly *gaah-gaah* over "*smart guns*." Hypocrites!)

There are only three forms of ID:

Something you *know* (e.g., a password or combination)

Something you *have* (e.g., a key or mag-strip ID card)

Something you *are* (e.g., biometric print of finger, voice, etc.)

"*Authorized user*" gunlocks can employ each of the above.

Something you *know*

This would be a combination lock. Trigger locks and lockboxes already exist and are inexpensive, and SIG plans to debut this year a 4-digit keypad pistol. Still, these do not meet Government's ulterior goals, as I'll soon explain.

Something you *have*

This would be a coded-transmitter wristband or magnetic ring. While such would theoretically significantly curtail the misuse of stolen guns, it does not satisfy ulterior goals.

The something you *are*

This form of ID is the most insidious, and the most effective in what Government is *really* after.

S&W's fingerprint scanner gunlock

S&W has spent \$5 million since 1996 on "*smart gun*" technology, placing its silly hopes on a biometric ID system. Your fingerprint would be scanned, and a digital representation would then be downloaded into the gun's on-board computer. To unlock your gun, place your finger on the gun's scanner. (No, I'm not kidding – they're quite serious about all this!)

I think that part of the reason why this particular idea is being pursued is to perfect such for law enforcement. Individual cops would love to carry a portable fingerprint scanner which is radio-linked with a national databank! (This technology would be the death knell of false ID and aliases, which circumvent controls of any tyrannical state.)

Another related goal of this technology is to condition all of us to be regularly fingerprinted. The banks are already doing a fine job of this for check-cashing requirements.

My philosophical objections

It's the "*authorized user*" language that gives me the chills. "*Authorized*" by *whom*? Gunowner or Government? To avoid public rejection of the scheme, authorization will first be voluntarily performed by the gunowner in some kind of in-house "self-registration." You'll scan your own fingerprint, or don your own wristband or ring transmitter.

Next, it will then be a simple regulatory matter to make mandatory what was previously voluntary. Finally, change the authorizing party from owner to Government, thus indirectly creating a databank of such gunowners (while simultaneously denying that such a databank in itself was ever a goal).

The whole scheme is a trap, and a clever one. Beware.

A small tactical concern

Through training we should gunproof our children, and not trying to "childproof" our guns. But, since Government is making it very difficult (if not illegal) to give children heirloom guns (as we received) or to take them shooting, modern youth are having less and less

exposure to guns. This is unhealthy, not just from a civic standpoint (e.g., for defense of self and nation), but in a *literal* sense by indirectly creating legislated gun ignorance which will increase negligent gun casualties.

My technological objections

No defensive firearm should ever rely upon any technology more advanced than Newtonian physics. That especially includes batteries, radiolinks, encryption, scanning devices, and microcomputers. Even if a particular system *could* be 99.9% reliable, that means it can be *expected to fail* once every 1,000 operations. That's not reliable enough – my life deserves more certainty.

DOWN THE SLIPPERY U.K. SLOPE

This section was lifted from an excellent essay by Joseph E. Olson and David B. Kopel called *All The Way Down The Slippery Slope: Gun Prohibition in England and Some Lessons for Civil Liberties in America*. You can download it from www.2ndlawlib.org/journals/okslip.html. I've spliced together some of the most concise sections, as the essay is 56 pages long.

Separating future generations from guns

The British government in the 1950s left the subject of gun control alone. Crime was still quite low, and issues such as national health care and the Cold War dominated the political dialogue. Even so, the maintenance of the existing, relatively mild, structure of rifle and pistol licensing would have important consequences. As the Firearms Act remained in force year after year, a smaller and smaller percentage of the population could remember a time in their own lives when a Briton could buy a rifle or pistol because he had a right to do so rather than because he had convinced a police administrator that there was a "good reason" for him to purchase the gun. As the post-1920 generation grew up, the licensing provisions of the Firearms Act began to seem less like a change from previous conditions and more like part of ordinary social circumstances. A similar process is at work in the United States, where only part of the population remembers the days before 1968 when federal registration was not required for people to purchase firearms.

The 1968 law contained one other provision that illustrated a key strategy of how to push something down a slippery slope: it is easier to legislate against people who cannot vote, or who are not yet born, than against adults who want to retain their rights. Reducing the number people who will, one day in the future, care about exercising a particular right is a good way to ensure that, on that future day, new restrictions on the right will be politically easier to enact. Thus, the 1967 law did nothing to take away guns from law-abiding adults, but the Act did severely restrict gun transfers to

minors. It became illegal for a father to give even an airgun as a gift to his thirteen-year-old son. The fewer young people who enjoy the exercise of a civil liberty such as the shooting sports, the fewer adults there will eventually be to defend that civil liberty.

This conditioning young people not to believe they have rights can exist in other contexts, of course. For example, the current American practice of denying American schoolchildren constitutional protection from locker searches, dog sniffs, metal detectors, and random drug testing is a good way to raise a generation with little appreciation for the Fourth Amendment.

If, over the course of generations, the percentage of a population that is interested in a right can be gradually reduced, stricter controls become more politically feasible, and the stricter controls can further reduce the long-term number of people who exercise their rights. This suggests the long-term importance of young people exercising their rights. If high school newspapers have large staffs that fearlessly report the truth, the future of the First Amendment is better protected. If, conversely, laws prevent teenagers from target shooting or hunting, the future of the Second Amendment is endangered.

Britain becomes totalitarian

National security concerns do more than keep British citizens from learning about their government. The *Security Service Act of 1989* provides: "*No entry on or interference with property shall be unlawful if it is authorized by a warrant issued by the secretary of state.*" If committed pursuant to an order from the secretary of state, acts such as theft, damage to property, arson, procuring information for blackmail, and leaving planted evidence are not crimes. In the United States, no official of the Executive Branch can authorize such actions. Only a court can authorize a government breaking and entering, and only if the government presents particular proof of necessity.

Security continues to eat away at other traditional rights of British subjects. In Northern Ireland the jury has been "suspended" for political violence cases. Confessions are admitted without

corroboration. **Confessions are extracted through "the five techniques:"** wall-standing, hooding, continuous noise, deprivation of food, and deprivation of sleep. Convictions may be based solely on the testimony of "supergrasses" (police informers).

The Birmingham bombings that led to the *Prevention of Terrorism Act* resulted in the conviction of a group of defendants called the "Birmingham Six." The defendants confessed while being held incommunicado by the police. The various confessions were so factually inconsistent that they could not have been true. The forensic scientist whose testimony convicted the Birmingham Six later admitted that he lied in court. Amnesty International charged that the defendants' confessions were extracted under torture. Civil libertarians fear that the Birmingham case is only one of many instances of police obtaining coerced confessions.

Of course United States police have sometimes framed people and manufactured evidence. What is stunning about the Birmingham Six case is the rationale used by Britain's highest judicial body to deny the appeal:

*If the six men win, it will mean that the police were guilty of perjury ...violence and threats, and the confessions were involuntary and improperly admitted and that the convictions were erroneous. The Home Secretary would have to recommend that they be pardoned or remit the case to the Court of Appeal. **This is such an appalling vista that any sensible person in the land would say: It cannot be right that these actions should go any further. They should be struck out.***

– *McIlkenney v. Chief Constable of West Midlands Police Force*, 2 W.L.R. 872 (C.A. 1980), at p.444

Failure of British gun control & prohibition

Have all these controls and abusive enforcement of controls actually made Britain safer? Armed crime in Britain is higher than it has been in at least two centuries. Armed crime is literally one hundred times more common than at the turn of the century when Britain had no weapons controls. Crime victimization surveys show that, per capita, assault in England and Wales occurs between two and three times more often than in the United States. These same surveys demonstrate that robbery occurs 1.4 times more, and burglary occurs 1.7 times more. In contrast to criminologists in the

United States, British criminologists have displayed little interest in studying whether their nation's gun laws do any good. Accordingly, definitive statements about cause and effect should be avoided. One can, however, say that as British gun laws have grown more severe, the country has grown more dangerous.

The raw statistics do make some facts clear: when Britain had no gun control (early in the twentieth century) or moderately-administered gun control (in the middle of the century), Britain had virtually no gun crime. Today, Britain literally has substantially more gun crime, as well as more violent crime in general. From 1776 until very recently, the United States has suffered a much higher violent crime rate than Britain, regardless of whether British gun laws were liberal or strict. In recent years, however, the once-wide gap in violent crime has disappeared. **This gap was closed by a moderate drop in American crime rates, coupled with a sharp rise in the British rates.** One does not hear British gun control advocates touting statistics about how crime rates fell after previous gun laws were enacted. Rather, the advocacy is based on the "inherent danger of guns," and on the "horror" of Dunblane and Hungerford.

[The "sporting purpose" trap](#)

The British gun-owners must accept much of the blame for their current predicament because of their concession that guns were only appropriate for sports. When the Home Office in the 1980s began complaining that some people were obtaining guns for protection, British Shooting Sports Council joined the complaint: "*This, if it is a fact, is an alarming trend and reflects sadly on our society.*" One hunting lobby official condemned "*the growing number of weapons being held in urban areas*" for reasons having nothing to do with sport. The major hunting lobby, the British Association for Shooting and Conservation, defended the right to arms, but only, in its words, "*the freedom to possess and use sporting arms.*"

The BASC's stance may appear to be a "reasonable" position, which demonstrates that gun-owners are not bloodthirsty nuts wanting to shoot people. Rather, shooters are harmless sportsmen,

and licensed guns belong in the same category as cricket bats or golf clubs. In practice, however, the concession that guns are only for sports undermines defense of the right to bear arms. If guns are not to be owned for defense, then guns make no positive contribution to public safety. If the sovereignty of the central government is absolute, then the people's ownership of arms makes no positive contribution to a sound body politic.

British libertarian Sean Gabb points out that the British gun lobbies' support of gun licensing undermines the lobbies' arguments that licensed gun owners are not part of the gun crime problem. As Gabb writes: "*[b]ut if control is needed, and if it can be made to work, the fact that it did not prevent Thomas Hamilton from shooting those poor children is surely an argument at least for tightening it in future.*" Gabb further argues that British gun owners have been losing battle after battle and have therefore shriveled in numbers because "*you all failed to put the real case for guns – that their possession for defence is a moral right and duty, as well as a positive social good.*" Instead, the many eloquent MPs who spoke against handgun confiscation pointed to all the admirable sporting uses of sporting guns: by handicapped people in the paralympics; by British athletes in the Olympics and in the Commonwealth Games; and by ordinary Britons on a Saturday afternoon of innocent sport.

The anti-ban MPs spoke well, but the prohibitionists' argument, while simple, was intellectually stronger. There are substitutes for sports; displaced handgun shooters can still use rifles or shotguns or airguns. But there is no substitute for a child's life. Even if virtually all handguns are never misused, at the very least, once in a while a handgun will be. If complete prohibition saves one life, it's worth it. The score in this debate, for potential lives saved was Gun Ownership: zero; Gun Prohibition: perhaps one or more. If this is the only calculus, then prohibition is a clear winner.

The only practical way that British gun owners could have avoided abuse of the licensing laws would have been to resist the first proposed laws that allowed the police to determine who could get a gun license. However the gun owners never would have dreamed of resisting, because such a law seemed so "reasonable." Having meekly accepted the wishes of the police and the ruling party

for "reasonable" controls, by the early 1970's British rifle and handgun owners found themselves in a boiling pot of severe controls from which escape was no longer possible. British shotgun owners, ignoring the fate of their rifle and handgun-owning brethren, jumped into their own pot of then-lukewarm water when they accepted the 1966 shotgun licensing proposals.

British gun prohibition in 2000 and beyond

Gun control in Great Britain now proceeds on two fronts. When a sensational crime takes place, proposals for gun confiscations and for major new restrictions on the licensing system are introduced. During more tranquil times, fees are raised and increased controls are applied to relatively smaller issues.

The frog-cooking principle helps explain why America's Handgun Control, Inc. (HCI), and the other anti-gun lobbies are so desperate to pass any kind of gun control, even controls that most observers agree will accomplish very little. By lobbying for the enactment of, for example, the Brady Bill, HCI established the principle of a national gun licensing system. Once a lenient national handgun licensing system was established in 1993, the foundation was laid so that the licensing system can gradually be tightened. The push has already begun, as President Clinton echoes HCI's demand that Congress close the "loophole" in the Brady Act that allows private individuals, those persons not in the gun business, to sell firearms to each other without going through the federal Brady background check.

Legal British gun owners now constitute only four percent of total households, with perhaps another small percentage of the population possessing illegal, unregistered guns. Given that many Britons have no personal acquaintance with anyone who they know to be a sporting shooter, it is not surprising that seventy-six percent of the population supports banning all guns. Thus, the people who used long guns in the field sports – who confidently expected that whatever controls government imposed on the rabble in the cities who wanted handguns, genteel deer rifles and hand-made shotguns would be left alone – have been proven disastrously wrong.

Strong rights usually need a strong sociological foundation. Approximately half of American homes contain a gun, and a quarter contain a handgun. Thus, except in a few cities like New York where gun ownership is rare, gun bans in the United States are nearly impossible to enact; too many voters would be unhappy. Consequently gun prohibition in the United States must focus on very small segments of the gun-owning population. That is why "assault weapon" bans, which cover only about one or two percent of the total firearms stock, are so much easier to enact than handgun bans. Even with "assault weapons," it is usually necessary to exempt the Ruger Mini-14 and Mini-30 rifles since these rifles, while functionally identical to banned guns, have too large an ownership base.

Continued appeasement?

Almost every time the British government has demanded more power, the great mass of British gun owners have placidly accepted the government's action without protest. The 1996-97 push for handgun confiscation saw the first significant display of mass gun-owner activism in many years, with tens of thousands of law-abiding gun owners and supporters rallying at demonstrations, and letter after letter to M.P.s. It was the biggest and most powerful display of political activism by British gun rights advocates in the twentieth century. If the gun owners had rallied so effectively in 1967, or in 1920, they would not be on the verge of extinction today. If they can sustain the present level of political activism into the next century, they will at least have a chance of survival.

But the politics of British gun owners in most of the twentieth century are a failure. The consequence of the "reasonable" approach of the gun owners has not been a reasonable treatment by the British government. Instead, the government has pressed down restriction after restriction upon the British people, and as every restriction fails to halt the rising tide of crime, the British government invents still more "reasonable" gun controls to distract the public from the government's inept efforts at crime control.

As armed crime grows worse and worse, despite nearly a century of severe firearms controls, the British government expends more and more energy "cracking down" on the rights of the law-abiding British people. The undermining of the right to arms has paralleled the destruction of many other common law rights, including the grand jury right, freedom of the press from prior restraints, the civil jury, freedom from warrantless searches, the right to confront one's accusers, and the right against self-incrimination. People who want to argue that gun rights can be destroyed while other rights prosper must find some other country to use as an example.

The United States' gun control lobbies and their intellectual supporters brim with praise for Britain's "sensible" gun laws. In response, are citizens of the United States who cherish Second Amendment rights necessarily wrong for being reluctant to take any more steps down the slippery slope? Should those United States citizens who cherish other parts of the Bill of Rights look forward to their civil liberty standards becoming more like Britain's?

Towards Closer Analysis of Slippery Slopes

While slippery slopes are frequently invoked in political and legal debate, little attention has been paid to factors that contribute to the real, as opposed to the merely theoretical, danger that a first step down a slippery slope may lead to severe damage or even elimination of a civil liberty. This Essay has identified the following factors that helped lead to the destruction of the right to arms in Great Britain:

media sensationalism about abuses of the right and media hostility toward the exercise of the right;

technological changes that introduce new and socially controversial ways of exercising the right;

the hesitation of extending civil liberties principles developed under old technologies to new technologies;

the creation of government jurisdiction, in the form of a licensing system, that created a platform for administrative constriction of the right;

political leaders gaining political benefits (such as diverting the public from the death penalty, or demonstrating the leader's compassion) from attacks on the right;

restrictions aimed at teenagers, which over the long term reduced the number of adults interested in the exercising of the right, and, consequently reduced the number of adults interested in defending the right politically;

shifting the burden of proof away from the government, which no longer had to prove the need for new restrictions or for the denial of a permit to exercise the right, and placing the burden on the individual, who had to prove his or her need to own a particular item;

restrictions created by administrative fiat that further reduced adult entry into or continuance in the activity, thus driving the exercise of the right to levels so low that rights advocates became an insignificant political group;

the production of deliberately misleading data by the government in support of restrictive legislation;

registration of the property of persons who exercised the right, which was later used to facilitate confiscation of property;

the government's loss of trust in ordinary citizens.

In addition, we identified one other potential factor that might encourage movement down a slippery slope, that being the prominent success of an earlier step down the slope; this factor did not appear to be present in England. None of the British gun controls resulted in any statistically noticeable reduction in crime in the years after their enactment.

These factors are not the only factors that could make a slippery slope situation dangerous; but when slippery slope arguments are raised, the presence (or absence) of these factors may indicate how real the slippery slope danger is. The more factors that are present, the greater the potential slippery slope risk.

This Essay has also identified several structural elements in the British system of government that contributed to the gradual elimination of the right to arms in Great Britain:

rights are subject to balancing against perceived government or social needs;

the government is not constrained by internal checks and balances;

there is a consensus that Parliament, which is, in practice, a few leaders of the majority party, rather than the people or the law, is sovereign;

there is no written constitution;

the absence of a right in a written constitution impedes the growth of rights consciousness among the people.

Regarding most of these elements, the United States is radically different from Great Britain. Consequently, civil liberties of all types are stronger in the United States than in Great Britain. However, the erosion of federalism and of the separation of powers over the last half century in the United States should caution Americans against complacency regarding the security of their constitutional structure.

We also identified several factors about the political defense of gun rights in Great Britain that made the arms right vulnerable to the slippery slope. Most of these factors have parallels regarding the defense of other civil liberties in Britain:

the right was defended only on sporting grounds, and not on the basis that it protects people from dangerous criminals or from dangerously criminal governments;

the right's defenders accepted and even applauded a great deal of regulation of the right;

the right's defenders accepted the principle that the right could be further regulated whenever the government saw a need, rather than only when there was a genuine necessity for more regulation;

the right's defenders usually appeased the government, rather than resisting unjustifiable government demands for more controls;

people who exercised the right in one way were often unwilling to defend people who exercised the right in a different way.

As with constitutional structure, the American system is considerably more sound than the British one. Civil liberties organizations such as the National Rifle Association and the American Civil Liberties Union are bolder than their British counterparts, and better able to articulate strong theories of right that can withstand heavy political assault and pressure to balance the right against other interests.

In the United States' political and legal debate, arguments for or against slippery slopes have heretofore often been made in a simplistic manner, with little more than assertions that slippery slope dangers do or do not exist. We hope that this Essay can provide a step toward a more complex analysis of slippery slopes by highlighting some of the elements that can increase or decrease slippery slope risks.

Slippery slopes are not inevitable, but neither are they imaginary. The British experience demonstrates that many civil liberties, including the right to arms, really can slowly slide all the way to the bottom of the slippery slope. While we have not aimed to convince readers to value any particular civil liberty, such as arms, speech, or protection from warrantless searches, we have attempted to show that it is reasonable for groups that do honor such rights, like the NRA, ACLU, or NACDL, to refuse to acquiesce in "reasonable" infringements of those rights. Even though, as John Maynard Keynes observed, we are all dead in the long run, persons who cherish a particular civil liberty want that liberty to endure not just in

their own lifetimes, but in the lives of subsequent generations. **In the long run, the best way to protect a given civil liberty from destruction may be to resist even the smallest infringements in the short run.**

BTP Note: Amen to that! Madison remarked on this very concept when explaining the reasons for our Revolution:

*It is proper to take alarm at the first experiment of our liberties. We hold this prudent jealousy to be the first duty of citizens, and one of the noblest characteristics of the late Revolution. The freemen...did not wait til usurped power had strengthened itself by exercise, and entangled the question in [legalistic] precedents. **They saw the consequences in the principle, and avoided the consequences by denying the principle.***

BATF-INDUCED NATIONAL I.D. CARD

The Government is using the BATF Form 4473 to cunningly implement a *de facto* national I.D. card (*i.e.*, the driver's license) and condition us all to its artificial importance. The 4/97 Form did not require gun buyers to have a State-issued I.D. card (which was merely "*particularly appropriate*"):

However, although a particular document may not be sufficient by itself to meet the statutory requirement for identifying the buyer [as a resident of his State], any combination of documents [such as rental contracts and utility bills] which together disclose the required information is acceptable.

All that reasonableness was lifted out of the 10/98 Form 4473 :

The buyer must provide a valid government-issued photo identification to the seller that contains the buyer's name, date of birth, and residence address.

The 1981 version of Form 4473 even allowed the seller to dispense with seeing any I.D. if the buyer was "*known to me.*" Creeping tyranny in deed! Although the SSN is not (yet) required on the current Form 4473, they strongly encourage it:

[The SSN requested] is strictly optional but will help to ensure the lawfulness of the sale and avoid the possibility of being misidentified as a felon or other prohibited person.

Furthermore, the Forms' length of time to complete has increased from 6 minutes (4/97) to 19 minutes (10/98). This is not only an "*infringement*" counter to the 2nd Amendment, but an increasing one! It shouldn't take even 6 or 19 seconds.

FINE SUPREME COURT RULINGS

The below are all exemplary rulings. They are all ignored.

No State shall convert a liberty into a privilege, license it, and charge a fee therefor.

– **Murdoch v. Pennsylvania**, 319 US 105

If the State converts a right (liberty) into a privilege, the citizen can ignore the license and fee and engage in the right (liberty) with impunity.

– **Shuttleworth v. City of Birmingham Alabama**, 373 US 262

The Court is to protect against any encroachment of constitutionally secured rights. –
Boyd v. U.S., 116 US 616

Where rights (liberty) secured by the Constitution are involved, there can be no legislation which would abrogate (abolish) them.

– **Miranda v. Arizona**, 384 US 436 (1966)

An unconstitutional act is not law; it confers no rights; it imposes no duties; affords no protection; it creates no office; it is in legal contemplation as though it had never been passed.

– **Norton v. Shelby County**, 118 US 425

Once, however, the 2nd Amendment is recognized by the Supreme Court to protect an *individual* right to own and carry guns, then all the above cases must then also apply. This explains why the Court has adopted its "hear no 2nd Amendment" stance (similar to why hotels have no 13th floor). To recognize the 2nd would undo the entire "*gun control*" apparatus, a main pillar of tyranny's New World Order.

COERCIVE BUY-UP PROGRAMS

First of all, we should *never* stoop to the gunphobe language of "*buy-back*." As Alan Korwin explained in Chapter 31, they can't buy "back" something that was never *theirs* in the first place! Call it a "coercive buy-up" or "disarmament by government check." Never surrender the battle for the metaphor.

Second Amendment challenge

The fight against a coercive buy-up should start here. We are not often enough first relying upon the Bill of Rights in gun cases, though that's changing (e.g., the 1999 victory of *Emerson v. U.S.* in San Angelo, Texas).

The Supreme Court would *have* to hear such a case!

I don't think the Supreme Court could successfully duck this one by denying *certiorari* – the hue and cry would be deafening. Such a case would be one of the most important cases in our Republic's history, the feds know it. Therefore, given the present Court's recent decisions of *Thompson Center*, *Staples*, *Lopez*, and *Printz* (all of which were USG losses), a buy-up scheme is probably still years away (when the character of the Court has sufficiently altered).

Tampering with the Supreme Court

Or, has sufficiently *been* altered. I imagine that there's been a *lot* of vicious White House talk against Justices Scalia and Thomas in particular. Their premature deaths (along the lines of Vince Foster's) would be *highly* convenient for many members of the Federal Government and their fascist agenda. If any Supreme Court Justice dies soon (especially Scalia or Thomas), there should be much national suspicion and a demand for the *fullest* investigation with *lots* of independent oversight. I am not being melodramatic. Conceivably, only a couple of lives stand in the way a Supreme Court rubber stamp approval on a federal gun ban, and the professional gunphobes *have* to know it. I do not at all put "executive action" past them.

A less-sure, though probably effective, way for rogue government agents to affect the Court is through extortion or the kidnapping of a Justice's family member. This has happened to State judges in organized crime cases.

Yes, all this is very ugly business, but it has never been beneath the scruples of tyrants. Hitler's minions set fire to the Reichstag and blamed it on the Communists to activate the emergency powers of the Chancellor and sweep away all civil rights. It worked, and that's the only thing that matters to the political pragmatists.

Fifth Amendment challenge

Given that the Constitution demands at least a *modicum* of fairness in the "*just compensation*" clause of the Fifth Amendment, the USG will very likely have to buy up banned firearms in private hands. (A coercive buy-up should be constitutionally challenged as these private guns would be headed for destruction, and not "*for public use*" as the 5th Amendment specifies.)

"We can't afford it!"

There's a hidden principle involved

This should be our *last* line of dialogue defense, because to embrace it *first* waives all defense under the Bill of Rights. I trust I make myself obscure. Here's a joke to illustrate my point: A man and

woman meet at a party and converse. After a bit of mutual flirting the man asks her "Assuming a serious offer, would you sleep with me for a million dollars in cash?" Although taken back, she muses for a moment and then replies that she would. "Well, how about for ten bucks?" Predictably, she's outraged, "What do you take me for?!" He calmly replies, "We've already established that. Now, we 're haggling on price!"

If we *begin* howling about the low dollar figure proposed for our guns, it's "established" that we'll whore away our 2nd Amendment rights and are thus only "haggling on price."

If we're left with "haggling on price"

Let's say that the Government stipulates only \$100 per gun. *Not counting administrative costs*, that means \$24 billion for the estimated 240 million guns. A more accurate average of \$500+ would mean \$120+ billion – in one year! These are huge amounts of money, regardless, so a buy-up might also be challenged on fiscal grounds. While such a challenge might not actually prevail, it could prove to be an excellent delaying tactic (especially if the courts got involved).

If a coercive buy-up goes through

Once our guns are gone, they can never be replaced. Think of them like the Jews enroute to the death camps. (As history has always shown, when they start burning books or guns, they'll soon be burning people.)

Saving the guns

Every opportunity must be explored to save as many guns from the smelters as is possible. They should aggressively be bought from those owners who are giving them up. If you can get away with advertising or setting up near the collection stations, do so. Tactically, this will likely be difficult. It may even be illegal, so be smart. (If that putrid day ever arrives, there will be plenty of chatter on how to go about all this. Meanwhile, network with other gunowners in CA, NJ, UK, etc. who have gone through it.)

If a coercive buy-up ever happens, there will have been much public discussion about it beforehand. Meaning, we'll have lots of warning. At the first significant whiff, start buying up guns. Stick with reliable, rugged guns in common cartridges. I'd begin with .308 battle rifles, then .223 battle carbines, then Glock pistols (which virtually never break or malfunction). Be sure to also clean the seller out of all ammo, parts, gear, etc.

Saving parts and gear

Guns which are inevitably enroute for destruction should be stripped bare of sights, mags, slings, flash suppressors, muzzle brakes, stocks, etc. **No gear whatever should be turned in!** (Since gear is not regulated, the Government cannot know *what* holsters, extra mags, mag pouches, slings, spare parts, tools, cleaning equipment, etc. one ever had, if any.)

If the law's wording does not specify the whole firearm, then a *totally stripped receiver* is all that the gun grabbers should expect. Remove the barrel, the stocks, the trigger group, the internal parts, *everything*. (If they ask, reply that you parted out the gun years ago because you were going to upgrade it, but just never got around to it. Or, you could reply that you had bought only the stripped receiver and was planning to assemble it when you could afford it. You get the idea.)

Who would give up their guns?

There are two types of gunowners would sell their gun to be destroyed. One acts out of fear, the other disinterest.

"Upset, but more afraid than upset"

Those who enjoy their guns and disagree with the buy-up, but are afraid to be caught with "contraband." These are good folks, but are not very long on courage. They could not be expected to fight like the Minutemen did on 19 April 1775. They *might*, however, provide mild support and aid to future freedom fighters as long as the risk wasn't too great.

This group would very often sell (or give) their unrecorded guns to future freedom fighters. At the very minimum, they would allow cherry-picking trades (e.g., your post-ban Olympic AR15 for their pre-ban Bushmaster or Colt) and they would strip their to-be-sold guns of all useful parts and accessories.

Estimated percentage of gunowners: 10-30%

"Incidental gunowners"

Those who inherited their guns, or bought one out of fear of increasing crime. They generally have little interest in their guns, rarely shoot them, and thus no strong emotional or philosophical ties to gun owning or the Second Amendment. The imminent "contraband" aspect will be all that's needed to make them give up their guns. They generally can't be counted on to help freedom fighters or sell us their guns.

Estimated percentage of gunowners: 20-45%

For tyranny's purposes, 30-75% still won't be enough...

So, in my totally subjective opinion, probably at least 30% and perhaps as much as 75% of American gunowners could voluntarily sell out their right to remain armed. That means at *least* 25% of gunowners would at least bury their guns (which is 50 million of them – many times over the numbers needed to successfully fight American Revolution 2).

The wildcards

The concealed carry permit holders

There are millions since the mid-1990s. They are a mix of the above types of gunowners. While many of them bought their handgun incidentally (as first time gunowners), having carried it daily has understandably created a bond, and thus they have *much* more emotional/philosophical equity in remaining armed.

While the State certainly knows that they are armed, it usually doesn't know precisely with *what* or with how many. Many permit holders might give up a cheapy handgun (a good reason for owning

one) just to get their name crossed off the list, while retaining their Colt, Glock, SIG, etc.

The full-auto owners

Unless they are willing to literally run off to the mountains with their Steyr AUG or M1919A4, I don't see how these gunowners will escape incredible scrutiny and hassle.

It's probable that many Class 3 folks have salted away many unregistered goodies. In fact, when the GCA68's amnesty for undeclared NFA34 stuff was in effect, most owners did not know if it was merely a ruse to flush out weapons, so many of them "hedged" on both sides and registered only a few items. Thousands of DEWATs, cannons, and mortars went underground. These owners could give up the registered stuff yet still have serious weaponry which the Government does not know about (until it's too late).

The BATF's National Registry contains only 190,000 NFA34 weapons. That's probably less than 20% of what's actually out there, and maybe not even 5%! Boo, hoo.

"But the government already knows that I have guns!"

If you live in one of the States which prohibits recordfree private transfers, and you are concerned that your resolve might be weakened since the State knows about all your guns, my strong advice to you is to *relocate* to one of the 23 recordfree States. This will give you "breathing room" to galvanize your courage.

I understand that having to potentially fight for your Liberty is a frightening prospect. Why stay in Massachusetts only to have your guns cleaned out by a raid team? Why not move to Vermont? Why stay in Kalifornia with your pre-ban Belgian FAL when you could – *should* – be in neighboring Arizona?

Are you a man or a mouse?

Do the math *right now* and figure out what your freedom is worth, and how much (or how little) you'll fight for it. (Be honest, as you won't be able to fool a harsh reality later.)

mouse

If you think that you'll likely give up your guns when things get hairy, then sell them to a more resolute fellow now.

man

Dedicated mariners don't live in Kansas. Gunlovers shouldn't live in those 10 (if not 25) States which don't support your right to self-defense. If, however, you *don't* yet own a battle rifle (but *would* use one if needed) and live in Connecticut, etc. – *move!* Yes, you'll have to quit your job and sell your house and move, but what's *that* compared to living as a *slave* later? If Liberty truly burns hot in your heart, then get to "high ground" no matter the cost.

Australia still has some men

After learning of some interesting statistics, there might be a bit of hope for Australia.

Out of an estimated 7,000,000 guns, 40% (2.8M) fell under the coercive buy-up. Of those 2,800,000, only 640,000 (25%) were turned in for a government check. The other 2,160,000 (many of which are on the registration lists) have apparently been salted away for their Rainy Decade. Good show!

37

Why I Will Not Obey California's
Gun Registration Edict

by Brian Puckett

Date: Friday, November 12, 1999 5:51
(Sent directly to the California Governor)

A BRIEF SUMMARY OF THE SITUATION

The Democrat-controlled government of California has recently issued two edicts, one that bans ownership of SKS rifles with detachable magazines and requires their surrender to the state, and one that bans buying, selling, or lending of so-called "assault weapons" and that requires present owners of such arms to register them. The edicts take effect January 1, 2000. For all those who have in the past stated that, "*When the state starts confiscating guns, then I'll know it's time to fight back,*" that time in California will be January 1, 2000.

Many people oppose registration because it precedes confiscation. Indeed it does, as those who were foolish enough to register their SKS's are now discovering. However, that is a practical reason to oppose registration, not a legal reason. And while avoiding confiscation is tangentially a moral reason to oppose registration, neither is it a legal reason. Refusing to obey a law because of what might happen or what has happened in other cases will not stand up in court. But there is a reason not to register or turn in any firearm that is practical, moral, and legal.

TWO QUESTIONS TO ANSWER

As regards the Second Amendment, determining the constitutionality of the California edicts mentioned above forces the examination of two basic questions. One, which arms are protected by the Second Amendment? And two, is registration an "infringement" of the Second Amendment's right to keep and bear arms? Fortunately, answering these questions is not a difficult or mysterious task. But they should be answered thoroughly.

WHAT IS THE BILL OF RIGHTS?

The Bill of Rights is not separate from the Constitution but is an integral part of it, as are all the other amendments. However, the Bill of Rights is special in that – like sections of the Declaration of Independence – it contains many of the core philosophical underpinnings of our government (especially Amendments 1, 2, 9, and 10). Therefore, it is easily the most important part of the U.S. Constitution. The rest of the Constitution, along with most of the remaining Amendments, deals primarily with the mechanics of putting this philosophy into effect in the form of a republic.

In the original document that we call the Bill of Rights, the Bill's ten enumerated items are listed as "articles". Those familiar with the history of the Constitution are aware that these articles were not afterthoughts, but were crucial elements whose written inclusion in the Constitution was insisted upon before certain states would agree to ratification of the preceding text. Because of this, a powerful case can be made that none of these first ten articles may be modified or revoked, because that would alter the fundamental philosophy underlying the Constitution and would violate the original agreement among the states.

THE PURPOSE AND MEANING OF THE SECOND AMENDMENT

The laws of the pre-U.S. colonies and the writings of the Founders clearly reveal that they, like all civilized humans, embraced the personal, common-law right of self-defense and property defense. The Founders' writings, such as the Federalist Papers, also clearly reveal their belief that self-defense includes defending oneself against a government gone bad. In fact the evidence shows that this latter item is a primary reason they included the Second Amendment in the Bill of Rights, and the reason for the Second Amendment's reference to the militia – the "army of citizens" (as opposed to the regular army).

The Second Amendment specifies the right of the people to keep and bear arms. If the people are to keep and bear them this must include, at the very minimum, personal arms – that is, arms that a single individual may carry and employ. For hundreds of years prior to the writing of the Constitution, the Western world's most advanced and cherished personal arm had been the firearm. Furthermore, the firearm is the sole arm continually singled out in the Founders' writings. Owning firearms was a right exercised in North America long before the existence of the United States.

TO MEAN ANYTHING, RIGHTS MUST INCLUDE ASSOCIATED NECESSITIES

For any given right, it is meaningless to affirm that right if the tools or necessities of effecting that right are prohibited. Consider our Bill of Rights:

It is meaningless to affirm the First Amendment's right to free exercise of religion if people are prohibited to own Bibles, Korans, or Torahs.

It is meaningless to affirm the First Amendment's "freedom of the press" if people are prohibited to own printing presses (or today's electronic methods of mass communication).

It is meaningless to affirm the Third Amendment's right to refuse to lodge a soldier in one's home, or the Fourth Amendment's right to be secure in one's home, if people are prohibited from owning their own home.

It is meaningless to affirm the Sixth Amendment's right to defense counsel if people are prohibited to use their own or public money to pay for an attorney's services.

And it is beyond meaningless – it is absolutely absurd – to affirm the Second Amendment's right to keep and bear arms if people are prohibited from owning arms. Applying the above-mentioned general principle of rights to the Second Amendment, it would be correct to state that it is meaningless to affirm the right to self-defense if people are prohibited from owning the tools or necessities of self-defense.

For example, consider elderly people, women, the physically handicapped, small-statured men, or anyone who is not a master of unarmed combat being faced with a large, or muscular, or armed assailant, or multiple assailants. It happens every day in this country. It is absurd, illogical, illegal, and inhumane to uphold their right to self-defense while prohibiting them from owning the most portable,

easy to use, proven, and inexpensive of instantly effective self-defense tools – guns.

WHICH ARMS ARE PROTECTED BY THE SECOND AMENDMENT?

Along with "the people", the Second Amendment specifically mentions the militia, consisting of armed citizens not enlisted in any regular military corps – the "citizen army". The militia's purpose is, as its name implies, a military one. The militia was – and still may be – pitted against other military forces. That was true in pre-U.S. North America, it was true during the Revolutionary War, and it is true today.

If the militia may be pitted against regular soldiers, whether of a foreign invader or of a tyrannical domestic government, then it follows automatically that at a minimum the citizens comprising the militia must possess personal arms (as opposed to large or crew-served arms like cannon) equal to those of the opposing soldiers. Equal personal arms means, of course, those that include all design features, capabilities, and ergonomics that make a military firearm suitable for modern battle. If this is not the case then there is no point in having a militia, as it will not pose an effective fighting force. For example, the extreme inadequacy of bolt action rifles in combat against semiautomatic arms is well known. But the Founders' firm insistence upon having an effective militia is absolutely clear from their numerous writings on the subject and from the existence of the Second Amendment itself.

That being so, military-pattern firearms are obviously protected by the Second Amendment. Therefore any restrictive legislation on military-pattern firearms, or on military design elements of other firearms, is completely contrary to the word and spirit of the Second Amendment and is therefore flatly unconstitutional. [*U.S. v. Miller*, 307 U.S. 174 (1939) completely supports this.]

REGISTRATION IS INCOMPATIBLE WITH RIGHTS

Consider the situation if a state declared that it was perfectly legal to own a Bible – or a copy of the Koran or the Talmud – but that you had to register it in order to keep and use it. Now, what if you did not register it – would you lose the right to own and read it? Of course not. The very idea is absurd. Under the laws of this nation you have the right to worship as you please. As we have seen, that right automatically includes articles necessary or associated with the right, such as books, crucifixes, stars of David, yarmulkes, and so forth.

In exactly the same way, if the state suddenly required registration of printing presses, would the owner of a press lose his right to own or use it by not filling out a registration form? Of course not. The right would still exist. No piece of paper affects it.

In exactly the same way, one does not have to register one's vocal cords, bullhorn, typewriter, pens, pencils, computers, movie cameras, etc, to exercise the right of free speech (or stated in modern terms, the right of uncensored communication). Under the Constitution, if a state issued an edict demanding registration of such things that rule would be invalid as law. Your right to use them would still exist, completely unaffected.

In exactly the same way, prior registration of one's body, home, address, papers, possessions, etc, is not necessary in order to enjoy the Constitutional right to protection from unreasonable searches and seizures of one's person, house, papers, and effects. These various physical things are automatically included, automatically protected by the right.

In exactly the same way, one does not have to register anything or fill out any forms in order to have the Constitutional right to a speedy public trial. It is automatic.

Now consider the situation if you do not register a gun. Is the Second Amendment somehow instantly suspended? Did it vanish? Do you somehow lose the right to keep and bear arms? Certainly not.

If you can lose a "right" by not filling out a piece of paper, then it is not a right. It is a privilege granted by the government, which is a different thing altogether. In the area of government, a privilege is a special permission or immunity granted by a government, it is generally related to the use of some public facility (such as driving on the streets, or using the public library) and it may be suspended or revoked even for minor infractions or misdemeanors.

In sum: Rights do not require government registration, certification, or approval, and are not subject to any form of taxation – otherwise they are not rights, they are privileges granted at the discretion of the government, controlled by the government, and revocable by the government.

REGISTRATION IS MORE THAN AN INFRINGEMENT

The Second Amendment reads,

A well-regulated militia, being necessary to the security of a free state, the right of the people to keep and bear arms, shall not be infringed.

The question may be asked, "*Is registration of a particular gun truly such a burden that it can be called an infringement of the right to keep and bear arms?*"

To begin with, if we were speaking of registering religious items or communications devices, none but socialists would dare ask such a question. Yet the Second Amendment directly follows the amendment concerned with the free exercise of religion and freedom of the press. The Second Amendment holds a place of priority in the Bill of Rights, which is primarily a list of inalienable personal rights.

But to answer the above question – Yes. Registration is absolutely an infringement, on at least three grounds. In fact, we will see that the rights versus privileges issue makes registration far more than a mere infringement.

Information.

Registration of a firearm gives the government information that can be used (and has been used, and is being used right now) to confiscate that firearm or to pinpoint its owner for weapon seizure, fining, incarceration, or execution. Having the government in possession of this information is directly contrary to the Second Amendment's intent to ensure that citizens always possess the means to overthrow the government should it become corrupt or tyrannical.

Government control.

Allowing the government to seize a citizen's firearm, or to suspend, revoke, or diminish a citizen's ability to defend life, family, property, and country for paperwork omissions or errors, for regulatory violations, for minor infractions of the law, for

misdemeanors, or arguably for anything less than conviction for a major crime of violence is also directly contrary to the intent of the Second Amendment. This is because virtually all citizens have committed, or will commit, one or more of the listed non-violent errors listed above, whereas the entire point of the Second Amendment is to place this same citizenry's right to keep and bear arms (and therefore the right of self-defense) out of the government's grasp.

RIGHT VERSUS PRIVILEGE

Critically relevant to all our rights, is that any edict that attempts to convert a right into a state-granted privilege by imposing prior requirements – such as registration – before it may be exercised goes far beyond mere "infringement" of that right; it becomes an attempt at outright abrogation of the right.

Therefore the state's demand to comply with the requirements of such an edict – no matter how physically easy compliance is – imposes not some mere inconvenience on the individual. It imposes the enormous moral, ethical, intellectual, and spiritual burden of denying the existence of the right.

It does not matter if the state demands that one simply tap one's nose five times in succession in order to be able to keep and bear a particular gun. This would still be a state-mandated prior requirement. Compliance would indicate tacit denial of the validity of the Second Amendment, and denial of the right it protects. Compliance would encompass an implicit acceptance of the right as a mere privilege, which is directly contrary to both the letter and spirit of the Second Amendment.

APPLYING THESE CONCEPTS TO CALIFORNIA'S EDICT

The argument against registration of, and restrictions on, military-style firearms may be approached by two logical paths that reach the same conclusions:

⊇ If the supreme law of the nation protects a personal right to keep and bear arms (which it does), then the failure to comply with a state mandate to fill out some registration form cannot revoke this, or any other, right. If the right to keep and bear arms cannot be revoked (and it can not be), then the right to keep and bear militia arms, which are the very arms implicitly referred to in the Founders' writings and in the Second Amendment itself, cannot be revoked. If the right to keep and bear militia arms cannot be revoked (and it can not be), then we may own and use any military-pattern individually portable firearm, all of which are practical militia arms. If that is the case (and it is), then any restrictive legislation based on militarily useful design elements of such firearms is flatly unconstitutional.

⊄ If the supreme law of the nation protects the personal right to keep and bear arms (which it does), then the right to keep and bear militia arms, which are the very arms implicitly referred to in the Founders' writings and in the Second Amendment itself, certainly exists. If that is the case (and it is), then we may own and use any military-pattern individually portable firearm, because all are practical militia arms. If that is the case (and it is), any restrictive legislation based on the militarily useful design elements of such firearms is flatly unconstitutional. If that is the case (and it is), then the failure to comply with a state mandate to fill out some registration form cannot revoke this right.

Again, the same situation prevails with all the personal rights. That is, no state mandate requiring registration – either of oneself or of things directly associated with a right – can be a prerequisite or condition of exercising a right, nor can it affect that right in any way. If it does, then the right has been unconstitutionally declared a state-controlled privilege.

SUMMARY

As we see from the above, no American can be legally compelled to register any militarily useful individual arm. That includes pistols, revolvers, carbines, semi-autos, military-style guns, hunting guns, self-defense guns, pump guns, lever guns, bolt guns, black powder guns, scoped guns, .50 caliber guns, .338 caliber guns, .30 caliber guns, .223 caliber guns, etc. All have been used, or are being used, as individual military arms, and therefore are implicitly referred to by the Second Amendment's militia clause.

Moreover, no American can be legally compelled to register any firearm of common design or function because the Second Amendment does not protect only guns that are useful in military affairs; it protects all guns. The militia reference is clearly meant as one important reason for protecting the right which follows: the right of the people to keep and bear arms.

The Second Amendment says simply "arms", which imposes no quantity or design limits. It says "bear", which in its narrowest sense would still include all firearms capable of being carried and used by one person. Therefore, under the supreme law of the land, the right to own one or several of any type of individually portable firearm exists permanently, inherently, automatically, without prior approval or conditions.

RELATED ISSUES

1) Indiscriminate weapons – those whose effects are difficult to direct upon, or confine to, a discrete target (such as flamethrowers, fragmentation bombs, chemical and biological weapons, mortars) etc. – are arguably excludable from the full protection of the Second Amendment as posing an unreasonable danger to friend and foe alike.

2) Individually portable machine guns are clearly allowed under the wording of the Second Amendment. However, under certain specific circumstances their employment might arguably be said to encroach into the area of indiscriminate weapons. Therefore, it is arguable that some extra care might be taken in the use of these firearms, but that any restrictions imposing an effective ban on their general ownership or general use would be unconstitutional. As this is a highly specific, highly debatable subject, it will not be, and need not be, delved into here.

Aside from the debatable exceptions of 1) and 2) above, absolutely no individually portable firearm of common design or function may be determined to be an indiscriminate weapon under any circumstances, nor to pose an unreasonable danger. This is because a ban on such a firearm could "logically" be extended to all other firearms of similar design and function (exactly what is occurring with California's edicts now), which would completely vitiate the Second Amendment. Thus, the 1994 Federal "assault weapon" ban and magazine capacity limit are both completely unconstitutional.

REGISTRATION – YOUR DECISION AFFECTS ALL RIGHTS

If a military pattern firearm, the firearm most suited to the militia mentioned in the Second Amendment, is not protected by the clear wording of the Second Amendment, then there is no meaning to the Second Amendment.

If there is no meaning to the Second Amendment, there is no reason to infer meaning in the rest of the Bill of Rights.

If converting the Second Amendment into a privilege by means of a registration edict is not the maximum "infringement" of that right, then nothing is.

If converting the Second Amendment into a privilege by means of an edict is possible, then it is possible to do so for any other right.

Therefore, regarding the Second Amendment, refusing registration affirms the right to own a militia firearm. It affirms the right to keep and bear all personal arms. It affirms the validity of the rest of the Bill of Rights. It affirms that attempting to convert the Second Amendment into a privilege is the maximum infringement of that right. It rejects a state's power to convert any right into a privilege. And lastly it affirms the validity of the Constitution, and the rule of law, not men.

DEMANDING OR COMPLYING WITH REGISTRATION IS BETRAYAL

Article VI of the Constitution designates the Constitution as the supreme law of the United States, and specifically states that it prevails over all state constitutions and statutes. Further, Article VI requires all legislative, executive, and judicial officers of the U.S. government and of the state governments to take an oath to obey the Constitution. Some of these officials may hate firearms and the power they give to the citizenry, but that is irrelevant – they must treat the Second Amendment as they would the rest of our Bill of Rights.

All state officials – judges, representatives, law enforcement officials – know these facts, but many are corrupt and ignore them. Their sworn word means nothing to them, nor does the Constitution, nor do the rights of the constituents for whom they work unless it suits their own political agenda. It is against this conscienceless species of human that decent Americans must continually fight, in California and in the rest of the United States.

If you believe you have the right to keep and bear proper militia arms in order to defend yourself, your family, your home, and your country, and if you believe this right is recognized in the Bill of Rights, then you cannot register or turn in any firearm whatsoever. You may rationalize it any way you wish, but if you register a firearm you are implicitly agreeing with the proposition that your right to own that firearm is nonexistent, and that such ownership is dependent upon permission from the government. Registration equals betrayal of yourself, your family, your ancestors, your birthright, your country, and your Constitution. Period.

A PERSONAL POSITION

Every new illegal gun control edict issued, and every day that existing illegal gun control edicts continue to be enforced, brings inexorable closer the time when firearms owners will train their guns on the politicians, judges, and other officials who have misled the rest of the public into giving up their sacred and ancient rights. A desire to avoid this terrible tragedy motivates my own actions regarding the Second Amendment and the rights it protects.

For nearly twenty years I have legally owned a militia rifle possessing the characteristics of the socialists' so-called "*assault weapon*". Now my right to own this arm, a right that has existed far longer than the two centuries – plus that this nation has existed, is suddenly being challenged by corrupt politicians. But I vehemently reject any infringement of my rights. I will never register this or any other firearm. Nor will I ever turn it in, nor will I ever alter any characteristic or attachment to it.

I will never again concern myself with legislation about pistol grips, bayonet lugs, high-capacity magazines, flash suppressors, threaded barrels, folding stocks, pre-or post-ban manufacture, or any other irrelevant detail of my firearms.

I will certainly not do as the NRA Members Councils suggest on their internet site, which is to saw off the pistol grip of one's AR-style rifle to make it "legal". Understand this : in America it is already legal. I sometimes wonder whether the socialists will issue an edict requiring all firearms to have a pink ribbon tied to the barrel, just to get a belly laugh as the panicked descendants of once-proud American patriots scurry to comply.

California's current governor, attorney general, and legislators who voted for these edicts can undoubtedly find thugs as corrupt and anti-American as themselves to send to my home. I vow not to physically interfere with their illegal activities, because I wish to see this matter in court. I hope that other men and women will join me in this public declaration of civil disobedience, because it would be best to have ten thousand civil disobedience cases in court, not just mine. But I understand why, in this day and age of brutal, ethics-free

"public servants"; citizens are reluctant to make themselves a target of the state. Fortunately, the citizens of California and other states demanding registration can strike a powerful blow for humanity simply by refusing to comply.

SEIZE THIS OPPORTUNITY

To those of you who whine, complain, and talk, talk, talk about your loss of freedom – I say now is the time to do something. There are few times in an average man's life when the occasion presents itself to take part in history. Here and now is such a time. This refusal to submit to tyranny is not simply about firearms. It is about human rights, it is about the rule of law, and it is about the continuance of this great nation. To what better use will you ever put your life than to stand up for these things? Will you look back on this moment and say, "*I wish I had done something,*" or will you step forward and seize this chance?

With the government having grown so powerful and corrupt, defying it is frightening. It is especially frightening because many Americans seem fairly content right now. But the feelings of the apathetic mass are irrelevant. They have never figured in history, and never will. The apathetic mass will go along with whatever system exists. It is the freedom-loving individual who, although part of a much smaller group, has guided every free nation toward the light.

Freedom is not maintained without taking risks and making sacrifices, without fighting for it. This has always been true, throughout history. If you are afraid to take a stand against this tyrannical government, if you excuse yourself by saying you must "take care of my family first", I say thank God there were men in the past who understood the priority of freedom.

Look at your children. Is it more important that they have an uninterrupted flow of plastic toys and the soft luxuries of modern American life, or that they grow up as free men and women, with all inherent rights and responsibilities? I say any man who does nothing while even a single basic freedom he has enjoyed is stripped from his offspring – a freedom secured by the blood of others – deserves no offspring.

As I said, I will turn in no firearms, ever. I will register no firearms, ever. My right to own and use firearms predates the Constitution. It existed before the corrupt socialists in Washington

and Sacramento came to office, and it will exist forever afterward. The Second Amendment simply recognizes this right. I do not know where my civil disobedience will lead, but I am certain where the slavishness and cowardice of compliance will lead. I refuse to take part in this foul business of registration. I hope that you refuse also. If we stand together we will set fires of freedom burning across America.

Mr. Puckett is a free-lance writer whose past work includes articles on U.S. foreign, domestic, and military policy for the *Houston Post*. His firearms and Second Amendment articles have appeared in the magazines *Handguns*, *Combat Handguns*, *Guns & Ammo*, *SWAT*, *Police*, and numerous other publications. He is the author of the essay "A Plan to Restore the Second Amendment," appearing in an upcoming issue of *Handguns Magazine*.

He is a co-founder of the gun rights resource organization Gun-Truths (<http://www.guntruths.com>) and the gun rights media action organization Citizens Of America (<http://www.citizensofamerica.org>). Mr. Puckett believes that much of the annual slaughter of Americans by criminals can be blamed directly on those who advocate gun control, and that any politician who advocates gun control neither trusts his constituents nor cares about their lives or property. The above statement/essay is an expression of his opinions alone. He may be contacted regarding this article at guns1776@earthlink.net Put the word RESISTER in the subject line. You can read more of Mr. Puckett's work at http://www.guntruths.com/Puckett/brian_puckett.htm

The above essay, which includes the biographical note, may be reproduced in any medium provided it is reproduced in full. A copy has been sent via email and regular mail to the governor of California. Feel free to forward it to all gun rights activists and lists.

CONFISCATION

Good day to you. ...I am in Australia and the [gun] amnesty is finished. Stick up for your rights now! Speaking out is easier than what we face here.

Gun owners who did not comply with new regulations in Australia are now faced with the fact that their name is flagged on government computers (they registered their guns, remember?), [and] they are liable to four years imprisonment and a fine that is about the cost of an average house.

Those with firearms licenses and those who did not hand in their weapons are liable to search of person or premises without warrant.

People cannot organize because what the government has done is now legislated, enacted law. Therefore any attempt to communicate or organise is liable to the charge of subversion. (Lesson to Americans: Start organizing now, while you can.) If an individual says to another, "I would suggest that you do not hand in your firearm," the speaker may be charged with subverting another to commit a criminal act.

They have started mounting raids to retrieve firearms and that is likely to intensify. (BTP Note: The proper word would be "steal." One can "retrieve" only what originally belonged to oneself.)

WHATEVER YOU GUYS DO, FOR GOD'S SAKE DON'T REGISTER YOUR WEAPONS. *It (confiscation) really is happening and it seems to be global.*

U.S. brothers, watch your six. If you don't with your politicians, then you will have to watch it for real against your own troopers.

Australia to America: God bless you and pray for us poor bastards down under.

– Carolyn Dillon, posted on 9 May 1998

*The slow torture and murder of the Branch Davidians in that town in Texas in April 1993 was, I propose to you, equivalent to the public burning of witches – everyone's eyes were glued to the image of the fire on their televisions. It does not matter whether you applauded the government for burning "kooks" or whether you were horrified that people were sacrificed for their belief in Christ and, in their minds, his representative David Koresh. **The purpose of the exercise was to horrify us.***

Now, let me ask you, why is Waco coming back to our television screens, this time with a wainscoting of courtrooms in the background? The message of the horror

was that those in power will do as they will, laws notwithstanding. We need also to ask ourselves, if the purpose was simply to murder those people, could they not have dropped a bomb on the building? Of course they could have. Their use of the Delta Force, in breach of the Posse Comitatus Law, would be no different than using the Air Force. Why was it prolonged? Well, the answer is already in – In order to torture your mind; you, the observer. And why is it coming back? For the same purpose; to rub in to your subconscious that – nay, I should phrase it differently – **to brainwash us with the recognition that laws and rules are immaterial; it is power that governs in America these days.** The second message is that you had better be politically correct and that some forms of Christianity are now politically *incorrect*. What's wrong with Christianity [from the Government's standpoint] you might ask? Many Christians believe that they were given inalienable rights by their God. This is the belief that needs to be destroyed; this belief that is the core of dignitas and which makes up the citizens of each state. If you have stayed with me so far, I think you are coming to recognize the wondrous benefit of a concept dignitas and why it is under threat and by whom. Here is [a commentary by Dr. Joost A.M. Meerloo, author of *The Rape of the Mind*]:

*There is in existence the totalitarian "Document of Terror" which discusses in detail the use of well-planned, repeated success of waves of terror to bring the people into submission. Each wave of terrorizing cold war creates its effect more easily – after a breathing spell – than the one that preceded it. Because people are still disturbed by their previous experience, morale becomes lower and lower, and the [conformity] becomes stronger; it reaches a public already softened up. **Every dissenter becomes more and more frightened that he may be found out.***

Gradually, people are no longer willing to participate in any sort of political discussion or to express their opinions. Inwardly they have already surrendered to the terrorizing dictatorial forces.

– Thomas Dorman, M.D.

www.zolatimes.com/V4.13/dignity2.html

Back in May 1995, President Clinton responded to the growing dissatisfaction of conservative Americans and their militias:

I say this to the militias and all others who believe that the greatest threat to freedom comes from the government.

(Well, where *else* has it historically always come from?)

If you say violence is an acceptable way to make change, you are wrong.

(Defensive violence is certainly an acceptable way to *prevent* change, *i.e.*, slavery.)

If you appropriate our sacred symbols

(No, we're *reclaiming* them; it was politicians like you who first stole them from the people.)

for paranoid purposes and compare yourselves to colonial militias who fought for the democracy you rail against, you are wrong.

(They would profoundly disagree; read their writings and speeches. And, they fought for a *republic*, not a democracy.)

How dare you suggest that we in the freest nation on earth live in tyranny?

(Bill, America is merely the healthiest patient in the cancer ward, that's all. That "*freest nation on earth*" stuff is just an echo of when we didn't suffer professional politicians like you.)

...There is no right to kill people who are doing their duty.

– Bill Clinton, 5 May 1995, East Lansing, Michigan

On page 416 of his fine book, *Send in the Waco Killers*, Vin Suprynovicz replies to Clinton's assertion:

Sure there is.

General Washington killed plenty of Redcoats and Hessians who were doing their duty – and in defense of the duly constituted government, at that.

The Jews in the Warsaw ghetto had every right to kill Nazis who were only doing their duty, enforcing duly enacted laws against Jews bearing arms. Our own prosecutions of the Nazis at Nuremberg in 1946 established a lasting precedent that men can and will be legally executed for "just following orders."

On page 368, Vin continues:

Yes, guns kill people. Sometimes, to preserve our freedom, some people need to be killed. *Occasionally, these are freelance bandits. But most often, down through the corridors of history, they have turned out to be uniformed agents of a tyrannical central government. That is precisely why the Second Amendment guarantees us that, in America, the government and its agents must never be allowed to outgun the common people...while it says not a word about "legitimate sporting use."*

The Founders could not predict precisely when such a time would come again. But they knew for sure it would come again. Thus they guaranteed in the strongest terms each citizen his private arms, so that – whenever their treason against our God-given rights leaves us no other choice – we, or our children, or our grandchildren shall retain the ability to shoot government agents through the head, and kill them.

That is what firearms are for. And that is why no people can be without them, and long remain free.

According to James Madison in the *Federalist* #46, encroachments on our liberties should "*provoke plans of resistance*" and should be "*opposed [by] a militia amounting to near half a million citizens with arms in their hands.*"

[Asking soldiers if they'll fire on gunowners](#)

Question #46 of the 1994 *Combat Arms Survey* given to U.S. Navy personnel said:

The U.S. Government declares a ban on the possession, sale, transportation, and transfer of all non-sporting firearms. A thirty (30) day amnesty period is permitted for these firearms to be turned over to the local authorities. At the end of this period, a number of citizen groups refuse to turn over their firearms. Consider the following statement:

I would fire upon U.S. citizens who refuse or resist confiscation of firearms banned by the U.S. Government.

The permitted answers were Strongly Disagree, Disagree, Agree, Strongly Agree, and No Opinion.

Notice that it said "*citizen groups*" and not simply "*citizens*." Apparently individual gunowners are expected to generally obey, but not *groups* of them? (By "*groups*," obviously the militias are meant.)

The likely reason why *Navy* personnel were asked this alarming question is because the Posse Comitatus Act of 1878 (amended in 1956 at 18 USC 1385) forbids only *Army* and *Air Force* troops from domestic law enforcement. *Navy*, *Marines*, and *Coast Guard* personnel are exempt.

THE STATES' RESOLVE GROWS

Although 9/11 has proven the deadly futility of gun-free zones and victim disarmament, the pols are again calling for Bill of Rights restrictions. (Apparently, they cannot help it.)

However, at least in Vermont and Arizona, legislators working to strengthen their citizens' right to keep and bear arms. Their efforts are indeed stirring:

Vermont

*From the state of Vermont comes the following reaction to the ongoing national assault on Second Amendment rights. In what can only be described as a 180-degree about-face reaction to the contemporary assault on the right to bear arms, a Vermont legislator introduced two bills in late January **that would make gun ownership mandatory and create a mandatory citizens' militia**. House Bill 760 would require state residents over 18 who do not own guns to register with the secretary of state's office and pay a \$500 fine and House Bill 763 would make military training a prerequisite for a high school diploma in the state. State Representative Fred Maslack is the moving force behind both of these bills and has been characterized as a strong supporter of gun rights. Representative Maslack believes that the right to bear arms implies an obligation to serve in a militia and gave his opinion that neither of these bills will become state law. Currently, the state of Vermont has some of the least restrictive gun laws in the nation and permits all adults to carry a concealed gun without a permit.*

No state in the history of the USA has ever passed a law that makes possession of arms obligatory. Rights by their very nature must never be confused with obligations. Making gun ownership mandatory would remove citizens' discretion on the issue and would have the same moral result as banning gun ownership totally. Both positions are equally authoritarian and the very antithesis of the basic concept behind any right: freedom.

– from the internet, 2/2000

Regarding the second paragraph, I have mixed feelings. Inherent to any right is some reciprocal of *responsibility* (and thus "*obligations*" as the author put it). The right to be armed also includes the situational responsibility to use one's arms to prevent crime and arrest criminals.

Instead of making it illegal to *not* own a gun, which I cannot fully accept, I would prefer that objectors to gun owning be required to fund the police forces. After all, being unarmed it is *they* who will

more likely be attacked by opportunistic criminals and thus need police protection. Further, to prevent an implicit umbrella of protection by those armed, their gun aversion would be public knowledge through signs posted on their stores, homes, and cars. (Perhaps they should have to also wear pink beanies!) Those who will not defend their *own* lives will not defend *yours*, and they should be instantly recognizable to all.

"*But they would be discriminated against!*" Yes, they would. That is rather the point. While government cannot discriminate, private citizens and companies have the *right* of association and disassociation with whomever they please. Only the government cannot be a bigot. I would not buy from or sell to a pink beanie-wearing coward, and I have the right not to support my philosophical enemies. If the gunphobes didn't like it, they'd have two options: buy a gun, or move to Neu Jersey.

Arizona

Article V of the Constitution gives Congress the outrageous authority to prevent corrective constitutional amendments (by not passing them and sending them to the States). This is a blatant conflict-of-interest issue, like giving arrested criminals the power to decide whether their own case gets prosecuted. Almost three years ago, I proposed a way out of Article V's ratification straightjacket:

Rather, our "end run" would be that the states may themselves float their own proposed constitutional amendments, bypassing Congress. The Nevada legislature could, for example, pass a proposed amendment and offer it to the other 49 states. If 37 more states signed on, the proposal would be considered ratified by the requisite 3/4ths of the states. Borrowing from Madison's The Federalist #40, it's an "absurdity" that the popular mandate is subjected to the "perverseness and corruption" of two-thirds of Congress by virtue of Article V. Because 357 members of Congress don't utter a "Simon says" we're going to allow this nation to take a dirt nap? Therefore, I shall "dismiss it without further observation." Moral: two-edged swords are a bitch.

– Kenneth W. Royce, *Hologram of Liberty* (1997), page 10/8

This would allow the States to exercise their rightful prerogative of self-rule in a historically valid precedent, without initiating direct physical confrontation with the Federal Government. (Whether or not the USG would go *quietly* is another matter.)

Apparently, somebody in the Arizona legislature read *Hologram of Liberty*. When the following came across my desk, I nearly fell out of my chair:

State of Arizona
House of Representatives
Forty-fourth Legislature
Second Regular Session
2000
HCR 2034
Introduced by
Representatives Johnson, Cooley

A CONCURRENT RESOLUTION

PROPOSING THE DISSOLUTION OF THE FEDERAL GOVERNMENT OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA IF CERTAIN CONDITIONS OCCUR.

Whereas, on July 4, 1776, our founding fathers proclaimed that the people had the right to alter or abolish their government and declared thirteen British colonies to be free and independent, or sovereign, states; and

Whereas, on March 1, 1781, the thirteen states formed a central government they called the United States of America under a charter known as the Articles of Confederation and Perpetual Union, which stated that "each state retains its sovereignty, freedom and independence"; and

Whereas, on September 17, 1787, the leaders of the Continental Congress signed the present Constitution of the United States, which was then transmitted to the thirteen states for ratification and the formation of a new central government; and

Whereas, several of the states delayed ratification of the Constitution and three states made clear their position regarding sovereignty by stating that "the powers of government may be resumed by the people whensoever it shall become necessary to their happiness"; and

Whereas, eventually all thirteen of the independent states ratified the Constitution of the United States and joined the new Union, while retaining their sovereignty as states. The states made the new central government sovereign only to the extent that the states delegated to it limited and specific powers; and

Whereas, the Constitution of the United States is merely a treaty among sovereigns, **and under treaty law when one party violates the treaty the other parties are automatically released from further adherence to it unless they wish to continue**; and

Whereas, the fifty current principals, or signatories, to the treaty have done well in honoring and obeying it, yet the federal agent has, for decades, violated it in both word and spirit. The many violations of the Constitution of the United States by the federal government include disposing of federal property without the approval of Congress, usurping jurisdiction from the states in such matters as abortion and firearms rights and seeking control of public lands within state borders; and

Whereas, under Article V, Constitution of the United States, three-fourths of the states may abolish the federal government. In the alternative, if the states choose to exercise their inherent right as sovereigns, **fewer than thirty-eight states may lawfully choose to ignore Article V, Constitution of the United States, and establish a new federal government for themselves by following the precedent established by Article VII, Constitution of the United States**, in which nine of the existing thirteen states dissolved the existing Union under the Articles of Confederation and automatically superceded the Articles.

Therefore

Be it resolved by the House of Representatives of the State of Arizona, the Senate concurring:

1. That when or if the President of the United States, the Congress of the United States or any other federal agent or agency **declares the Constitution of the United States to be suspended or abolished**, if the President or any other federal entity attempts to institute martial law or its equivalent without an official declaration in one or more of the states without the consent of that state **or if any**

federal order attempts to make it unlawful for individual Americans to own firearms or to confiscate firearms, the State of Arizona, when joined by thirty-four of the other fifty states, declares as follows: that the states resume all state powers delegated by the Constitution of the United States and assume total sovereignty; that the states re-ratify and re-establish the present Constitution of the United States as the charter for the formation of a new federal government, **to be followed by the election of a new Congress and President and the reorganization of a new judiciary**, similarly following the precedent and procedures of the founding fathers; that individual members of the military return to their respective states and report to the Governor until a new President is elected; that each state assume a negotiated, prorated share of the national debt; that all land within the borders of a state belongs to the state until sold or ceded to the central government by the state's Legislature and Governor; and that once thirty-five states have agreed to form a new government, each of the remaining fifteen be permitted to join the new confederation on application.

2. That the Secretary of State of the State of Arizona transmit copies of this Resolution to the President of the United States, the President of the United States Senate, the Speaker of the United States House of Representatives and each Member of Congress from the State of Arizona.

I have just one word to say about all that: *Wow*.

They've even improved on my idea by requiring only 9/13's of the States (from Article VII) instead of the 3/4's stipulated in Article V. So, instead of 75% (38) of the States, only 69.23% (35) are required to dissolve the current compact and form another. Alexander Hamilton must be spinning in his Wall Street tomb.

If enough of the States begin to really feel encroached upon by the USG, this resolution could actually go somewhere. The fact that it was passed as a *joint* resolution is nothing short of astounding. Even if you don't live in Arizona, you should write Representatives Johnson and Cooley and praise them for such integrity and courage.

They are truly American *statesmen* in the tradition of Thomas Jefferson.

GUN CONFISCATION ABROAD

Several countries are following the NYC model: registration, then confiscation. This works with the wimps.

England

Following the mass murder of 16 Scottish school children and their teacher by the homosexual child molester Thomas Hamilton, Britain rode the wave of media hysteria and collected over 100,000 handguns larger than .22 caliber.

Knives, pepper spray, etc. are also strongly discouraged. Unarmed victims can say, "Stop! Or, I'll say 'stop!' again." In a 15 September 1997 *The London Telegraph* article *TEARS AS SPORTSMEN LAY DOWN THEIR ARMS* by Boris Johnson:

"They aren't too chuffed (pleased)," says Insp. Paul Brightwell. "I've seen grown men close to tears handing over a gun they've had a long time, saying 'this is the pistol my father had in the Second World War, ' or 'my wife gave me this for our 25th wedding anniversary.'"...

Nanny is confiscating their toys. It is like one of those Indian programmes of compulsory vasectomy....

Law-abiding gun-owners are now handing over their weapons here at rate of 50 to 60 a day.

Of the 6,000 fullbore and smallbore handguns in the Thames Valley area, about 3,000 have already been surrendered. That includes about 550 examples of .22 pistols.

"They're not banned yet, but some people are seeing the writing on the wall," says Insp. Brightwell. *In two weeks the three-month surrender period will be up. The legal will have become illegal. An entire pastime will have been exterminated. Britain will be the only country in the world where it is forbidden to practise for an Olympic sport....(Not to worry, chaps. Australia joined you in 1998.) We, the taxpayers will have to cough up about £1 billion in compensation; and still the shooters will receive 25 per cent less than the full value of any improvements to their weapons.*

"These people are being legislated against because of the insane actions of one or two people. There are ordinary people. Dunblane (the "Littleton" of Britain) affected them in the same way that it affected you and me."...

(Since British cops get to keep *their* guns, how were *they* "affected" by the ban?)

A man wearing cowboy boots, moustache and denims is walking denuded to the door. His eyes are moist as he proclaims that he is "absolutely fed up with the situation and the way everyone's been treated."

(No, he's not "*fed up*." If he *were*, then he wouldn't have surrendered his guns, or let them be taken.)

He continues, "I've been shooting for 30 years. My eldest daughter shoots. I've never been in any type of trouble with the police. I've served two terms with the Army in Northern Ireland," he says, adding that he is about to resign from the Territorials. "If I can't be trusted to put a few holes in a bit of paper, why should I be trusted to defend my country?" (That's something his government should have more carefully considered.)

Now his expensive leather holsters, bandoleers and belts are to be burned, even though they are "uncontrolled items."

(See, *this* is what I'm talking about: the *feistiest* citizen of the story *voluntarily* also brings in his *gear*? Those people are truly hopeless.)

His 9mm Lugers and bullet making equipment will either go to a foundry in South Wales or a crusher in the Midlands.

(Not unless one of the cops nabs them for his own, which I'll wager happens to much of the good stuff.)

Nothing will be excepted from destruction apart from Glock 17s, which the police use themselves, and any items of historic interest. (All guns are of historic interest!) But it is the melting pot for...this huge Smith and Wesson .45 with an eight inch barrel. "Feel the weight of that." says Insp. Brightwell, handing me a shiny two-tone slug. "You'd know if that hit you. Why would you want something that massive to shoot at targets?"

(Groan. You wouldn't. It was to shoot Bad Guys with, you dolt!)

Insp. Brightwell may feel sorry for the shooters; and yet at heart he is a policeman.... (Who's just following orders...) "We support the [confiscation] measures in the greater interests of public safety."

"*In the greater interests of public safety*" was first used by the Nazis to round up guns. You'll be hearing it over here soon.)

All the legislation means is no more mayhem by owners of legal handguns, since legal handguns will no longer exist. It is no use the shooters protesting that this will do nothing about the myriad of illegal weapons, or [temporarily] legal shotguns; or that the existing law should have ensured that Thomas Hamilton's guns were taken away.

The owners of all the 160,000 handguns are penalised for the dementia of a couple of their number, and because no one, in the current climate, dare speak for them.

(It was the handgun owners who didn't speak for *themselves*! Honest citizens with handguns never need anybody *else* to speak on their behalf.)

[Australia \(www.ssaa.org.au/\)](http://www.ssaa.org.au/)

By September 1997, over 600,000 firearms were coercively purchased by the government following Australia's worst mass killing of 35 people in Tasmania by Martin Bryant.

On a humorous note, 40,000 Aussies used their government check to purchase another firearm. The buy-up merely assisted the "exchange" of one gun for a better one.

[New Zealand \(www.ssanz.org.nz/\)](http://www.ssanz.org.nz/)

No confiscation yet, but their government is pushing for mandatory registration of all firearms. A mass murderer is obviously the next prerequisite... Stay tuned.

[Canada \(www.nfa.ca/\)](http://www.nfa.ca/)

After Marc Lepine slaughtered a number of college women with a Mini-14, the Canadian parliament passed Bill C-68 requiring the registration of all firearms by 1 January 2003. Warrantless home searches are now authorized. Half of all handguns are outlawed, and the other half cannot be sold but must be destroyed upon the owner's death. The province of Alberta (the "Montana" of Canada) has sued to block the plan.

Notice any *pattern* here? Armed madman with criminal record kills many people, creating outrage over gun ownership which results in new gun control laws. This formula was invented here in America. (One wonders if some of these murderers were not intentionally destabilized through *Prozac* withdrawal, etc. Rent the movie *The Parallax View* sometime for a similar dramatic plot.)

UN GUN-CONTROL

...arms...discourage and keep the invader and plunderer in awe, and preserve order in the world as well as property. ...Horrid mischief would ensue were [the law-abiding] deprived the use of them.

– Thomas Paine

If the Japs should ever try to raid our Pacific coast they would find the west just as wild as it used to be.

Cow punchers, hard rock miners, farmers, even business men and factory workers, have oiled their rifles and are keeping them handy. Good hunters make good snipers and crack shooting is a tradition in the west. Right after America entered the war a spontaneous movement to put their rifles in good shape swept the western population. Armed men began to band together in many communities. (Note: This is a militia group.) Now, efforts are being made to organize the groups into official home guard units.

...Armed men in many Oregon communities have held organization meetings, 1,000 armed civilians having been rallied at the small town of Tillamook alone.

...It's hard to find a revolver or rifle for sale in the west today. Practically everything available has been bought up. Standard calibers of ammunition are just as scarce.

– "Minute Men of 1942," *Popular Mechanics*, October 1942

What Congress doesn't have the nerve to ban, the UN will:

...there are wide differences among States (nations) as regards which types of arms are permitted for civilian possession, and as regards the circumstances under which they can legitimately be owned, carried and used. Such wide variation in national laws raise difficulties for effective regional or international coordination.

States (nations) should work toward the prohibition of unrestricted trade and private ownership of small arms (defined as "...revolvers and self-loading pistols, rifles and carbines") and light weapons.

– "Report of the Group of Governmental Experts on Small Arms," issued by the United Nations

"Disarmament" doesn't mean just nuclear weapons – it also means your own firearms. On 22 December 1995, the UN announced a study of individually held small arms which:

are increasingly associated with crime, accidents and suicides, and form a major source of illicit profits for transnational criminal networks...

– www.un.org

I expect an international "War On Guns" soon. The only well-armed citizenries left are those of Switzerland and America (and to a lesser extent, Bolivia, the Czech Republic, Israel, and Norway). Wherever

the UN moves in (e.g., Somalia, Rwanda, Haiti, Bosnia) it forcibly disarms the populace. Independently armed citizens cannot be allowed, for the UN god must reign supreme.

We're eventually due for an international enforcement of a domestic gun ban. *Good*. It'll wake up millions of fence-sitters, and our vigilant Citizens won't mind defending their rights against baby-blue helmeted foreign troops from Bulgaria. (If we're lucky, the UN might even send the French, oui?) The Smurfs will have *big* problems.

WHEN THEY COME FOR YOUR GUN

That government, being instituted for the common benefit, the doctrine of nonresistance against arbitrary power and oppression is absurd, slavish and destructive of the good and happiness of mankind.

– Tennessee Constitution, Declaration of Rights

Now that they know *who* you are, *what* you have and *where* you store it, the confiscation raids can begin. Will you "Pass" or will you "Play"? The English and the Australians went through this and they chose "*mouse*" without a squeak. Fine, those whimpering souls don't deserve their guns.

So, this could be *your* story – *our* story – if we don't wake up and grow some gonads, *quickly*. Or, be defanged and get sent to the camps. Your manacles are waiting. "*Hey, this is America! This can't happen here!*" That's exactly why it *can* happen here; because it's too incredible for most people to even contemplate.

*Don't ever think it can't happen here. It has happened here. **We have a shameful history – don't ever forget it.** In 1932, twenty thousand World War One veterans peacefully assembled...in Washington [D.C.] to urge Congress to give them their war bonus early. The military drove them out at gunpoint. General Douglas MacArthur had full armament, including foot soldiers with rifles and bayonets, cavalry with pistols and sabers, and tanks. MacArthur led his troops into a place where twenty thousand unarmed American war veterans were camped, and he burned them out. The soldiers shot and bayoneted some of the veterans, their wives, and children. Babies died from tear gas inhalation. The result of this horror is that Hoover was defeated and Franklin Roosevelt was able to seize power and drastically expand the government's reach into your lives. Part of that meant passing the unconstitutional National Firearms Act of 1934, which was the beginning of the terrible situation we now face. What happened at Waco and the disaster we face now is nothing new. It started sixty years ago with Franklin Roosevelt, it's gotten worse ever since, and we let it happen!*

– John Ross, *Unintended Consequences* (1996), p. 566

Gun registration and confiscation have preceded every modern genocide in history. Ask the murdered Sioux Indians of the 1870s. Ask the dead Moroccan Jews of 1912. Ask the starved Ukrainians of the 1930s. Ask the dead Jews of Nazi Europe. Ask the gulaged Soviet dissidents. Ask the 65,000,000 dead post-1948 Chinese anti-Communists, and the 2,000 massacred students of 1989 Tiananmen Square. If these groups had been *armed*, would they likely have been shot, flattened by tanks, or herded into gas chambers?

Prompt defensive measures (this means shooting back, folks) are the most effective means for the prevention of genocide.

– V.V. Stanciu, Secretary of the International Society for the Prevention of Genocide (Paris, France)

A society of sheep must in time beget a government of wolves.

– Bertrand de Juvenal

Wisdom is knowing what to do next. Virtue is doing it.

– David Starr Jordan

Cowardice...in an individual, is the unpardonable sin.

– Theodore Roosevelt

The price of freedom is the willingness to do sudden battle, anywhere, anytime, and with utter recklessness.

– Robert A. Heinlein

*If the representatives of the people betray their constituents, then there is no resource left but in the exertion of that original right of self-defense which is paramount to all positive forms of government, and which against the usurpations of the natural rulers may be exerted with infinitely better prospect of success than against those of the rulers of an individual State. In a single State, if the persons entrusted with supreme power become usurpers, the different parcels, subdivisions, or districts of which it consists, having no distinct governments in each, can take no regular measures for defense. **The [State] citizens must rush tumultuously to arms, without concert, without system, without resource; except in their courage and despair.***

– Alexander Hamilton; *Federalist Paper # 28*

Stay armed and stay free. England was expelled from America in 1781, from Ireland in 1920, and from Palestine in 1948; France and the U.S. from Vietnam; Portugal from Angola; the U.S.S.R. from Afghanistan – all because the counter insurgents had both the will *and the means* to resist insurgent troops.

Within the society that still maintains a rational legal system, civil disobedience is justified to bring a bad law to court for a review. Civil disobedience is to force a review of bad legislation. This is an opportunity for the defenders of freedom and reason to prove their case and, thereby, repeal or nullify bad laws.

Civil disobedience in an irrational legal system serves an altogether different purpose. This is the simple rejection of the usurpations of an oppressive government. Disobeying this government is an act of self-preservation – for if the government is acting contrary to reality and reason, then its edicts, regulations, and commandments are dangerous and opposed to human life. Civil disobedience in this context is the psychological and physical preparation for civil war.

A policeman coming to take you to Auschwitz deserves to be shot. A policeman coming to steal your property deserves to be shot. A policeman coming to kidnap your children to haul them off to a government accredited indoctrination center deserves to

be shot. A policeman coming to confiscate your means of self-defense, your guns, deserves to be shot.

As a government moves more and more toward the totalitarian state, it is increasingly inclined to intimidate the citizens by threatening resistance to the police with mandatory death. This is less than the Geneva Conventions guarantee to captured soldiers. So if you are going to resist, renounce your citizenship, start your own country, sign the Geneva Conventions and then declare war on the tyrannical government.

– Mark Laughlin

www.ebarricades.com/root/POF5.html

And here's the moral:

When they come for your guns, give 'em the ammo first.

If you haven't seen the film *The White Rose*, go find a copy. It's about the student anti-Nazi resistance movement of 1943, which was finally crushed by the guillotine. The White Rose's second flyer included the below text, which struck me as amazingly poignant for us today:

*Wenn so eine Welle des Aufuhrs durch das Land geht,
wenn es in der Luft liegt,
wenn viele mitmachen,
dann kann in einer letzten, gewältigen Anstrengung
dieses System abgesch◇werden.*

*If a wave of revolt rolls across the country,
if it is carried by the air,
if many people join us,
then in one last, powerful effort,
this system can be shaken off.*

WHEN THE RAIDS COME

A prudent man foreseeth the evil and hideth himself; but the simple pass on, and are punished.

–Proverbs 27:12 (KJV)

Pressure makes diamonds.

–Gen. George S. Patton

First, they'll visit the homes on their gun registration lists. If you're on the list, prepare yourself for a knock at the door. **Do *not* let them in under *any* circumstance!** Speak to them through a closed door, and reply, "*If I were a gunowner, you can be sure that I would comply with all applicable laws. Beyond that, I've got nothing else to say. Good day, officers.*"

Later, they'll get around to List #2 – the problem children. By then, you should have *moved*, or at least hidden your prohibited guns out of town/state. If you haven't, then the choice of "Pass or Play" will be forced upon you. Know in advance what you'll do, and make necessary preparations.

The raids *will* come. The freedom-haters are far too committed to back down on the gun issue. If only to save face, the raids will be ordered. When that happens, the gloves are off, folks. Give up your guns and expect the camps a few years later. Do not be "declawed"! Get tough now, because you'll need to be tough later – and toughness (like a callus) is built up over years, not created in the moment. Steel yourself for all this now, as it'll be too late to get courageous later.

Yes, guns kill people. Sometimes, in order to preserve our freedom, some people need to be killed. Occasionally, these are freelance bandits. But most often, down through the corridors of history, they have turned out to be uniformed agents of a tyrannical central government. That is precisely why the Second Amendment guarantees that, in America, the government and its agents must never be allowed to outgun the common people...while it says not a word about "legitimate sporting use."

The Founders could not predict precisely when such a time would come again. But they knew for sure it would come again. Thus they guaranteed in the strongest terms each citizen his private arms, so that – whenever their treason against our God-given rights leaves us no other choice – we, or our children, or our grandchildren shall retain the ability to shoot government agents through the head, and kill them.

That is what firearms are for. And that is why no people can be without them, and long remain free.

– Vin Suprynowicz; *Send in the Waco Killers* (1999), p.368

The below essay contains much good advice, which supplements my book *You & The Police!*

What To Do If The Police Come To Confiscate Your Militia Weapons

by Howard J. Fezell, Esq.

This essay originally appeared in the June, 1990 issue of DOWN-RANGE, the official publication of the Maryland State Rifle & Pistol Association. (Also check out a file put on the Net by the ACLU entitled *Your Rights in an Encounter with the Police* and download their pocket-sized Bustcard.) Go to www.2ndAmendment.net for other essays on your right to keep bear arms.

As California and New Jersey have enacted bans on the sale and unlicensed possession of militia-style semi-automatic rifles, every Mary-lander who professes loyalty to the Constitution should consider what action he or she will take in the event that Congress, or our own General Assembly were to follow suit. The points addressed in this article are premised on three assumptions.

1) Either Congress, or our General Assembly has enacted legislation prohibiting or severely restricting the possession of weapons protected by the Second Amendment (e.g., military pattern semi-automatic rifles).

2) The reader has already decided to uphold the Constitution and not turn over his or her "*prohibited*" firearms under any circumstances, nor to register such weapons in order to facilitate their future confiscation. The reader has also failed to respond to government directives to dispose of or surrender such firearms.

3) The reader has secured all "*prohibited*" firearms away from his or her principal residence so as to prevent their unconstitutional seizure by the authorities.

What do you do when the police show up on your doorstep demanding the surrender of your militia weapons? In responding, bear in mind that you have two important rights guaranteed by the Fourth and Fifth Amendments to the United States Constitution.

The Fourth Amendment protects you against unreasonable searches and seizures. If the police want to search your house without your consent, they need a warrant. Warrants may only be issued upon a showing of probable cause, supported by an affidavit. The facts contained in the affidavit must do more than support a mere suspicion. The test is whether the information in the affidavit would justify a person of prudence and caution in believing that an offense is being committed, *e.g.*, that "*prohibited*" weapons can be found on your premises. The requirement of probable cause for the issuance of warrants is one of your most precious constitutional protections.

NEVER GIVE THE AUTHORITIES YOUR CONSENT TO SEARCH YOUR HOUSE, YOUR CAR, YOUR PLACE OF BUSINESS, OR ANY OTHER PREMISES UNDER YOUR CONTROL.

Consent dispenses with the necessity of probable cause. While lacking probable cause, if the police conduct a search with your consent and seize evidence for use against you in court, your lawyer will not be able to suppress it on the basis that the search was warrantless.

The Fifth Amendment protects you against giving evidence against yourself, *i.e.*, your right to remain silent. Just as you cannot be compelled to testify against yourself in a criminal trial, neither can

you be compelled to answer a policeman's questions about that AR-15 you bought a couple of years ago and never surrendered. Don't be bashful about invoking this right. **It's always better to remain silent and appear guilty than to open your mouth and prove it.**

At the outset of any contact with the police, ask them if they have a warrant to search your premises, or a warrant for your arrest. Without one or the other, don't let them inside your front door. If they have neither, politely request that they leave and gently close the door. If you have an attorney, keep one of his cards in your wallet. Give it to the officer in charge and request that all inquiries be made through your counsel. Remember, the police wouldn't be at your doorstep if you were not the target of a criminal investigation. You have no obligation whatsoever to cooperate with people who intend to unlawfully confiscate your property and put you in jail. They can't arrest you for keeping your mouth shut and going about your business.

The police may still persist in trying to question you, or ask your consent to "*take a look around.*" Again, if you have an attorney, give the officer in charge one of his or her cards and request that all inquiries be made through your counsel. Above all, remember that you have the right to break off this conversation. Do so immediately.

In some instances where the police lack a search warrant, they will tell you that it's a simple matter for them to obtain one and they "*just want to save everybody a lot of time.*" This is hogwash. Politely tell them to go get one, and close the door. If they suggest that it will "*go a lot easier on you*" should you give them your consent to search, tell them to call your lawyer, and close the door.

In the event the police do in fact have a warrant either to arrest you or to search your premises, do not offer any resistance. You will have other battles to fight (presumably with the weapons you have hidden) and you want to be alive and kicking when the time comes. You are a member of the militia and we don't want to lose you or your weapon. You also don't want to do anything to endanger your family or deprive them of a home. Don't be foolish and engage the authorities in a firefight that you have no chance of winning.

On the other hand, you are not obliged to do anything to make the officers' job easier, such as giving them the combination to your

gun safe. You have the right to remain silent and should take advantage of it. That may cause the authorities to forcibly open your safe, with resultant damage. But let them work at their task. After all, it's their search warrant.

Politely request to see a copy of any warrants, and above all, remain silent. Anything you say can be used against you in court. Tell the officers that you do not want to say anything or answer any questions – and that you want to talk to an attorney immediately. If you already have a lawyer, request permission to telephone him or her. If you have been taken into custody, the police are obliged to cease and desist from interrogation once you have asserted your right to remain silent and requested the assistance of legal counsel.

Your spouse and children will be natural targets of interrogation for the authorities. Do they know where your firearms are hidden? Although Maryland law generally prohibits your spouse from testifying against you in a criminal trial, that will be of no help if he or she breaks down under questioning and the authorities know where to retrieve your guns. Never forget that your objective is to safeguard your weapons and ammunition for the defense of the Constitution against all enemies, foreign and domestic.

If you or a family member is subpoenaed to testify before a grand jury or other judicial or governmental body, get an attorney immediately. Legal counsel can be very helpful, either in trying to quash the subpoena or helping to invoke one's rights against self-incrimination. (BTP Note: The 5th protects against *all compelled self-testimony* incriminating or not!)

Never, under any circumstances, should you lie to the authorities. Simply exercise your right to remain silent. Don't try to snow them with phony bills of sale that can easily be checked out and used to impeach your credibility in court should you decide to testify. Above all, don't file a false police report that your guns were lost or stolen. Making a false report to a police officer that results in an investigation being undertaken is a criminal offense in Maryland. Remember, you are not a criminal. Your ultimate goal is to defend the Constitution.

Likewise, don't fall for any of the authorities' lies. Police love to play "Mutt & Jeff" (also known as "Good Cop – Bad Cop"). One

officer comes across as a real hardcase, telling you about all the jail time you're looking at. After a few minutes of this, his partner takes you aside, offers you a cigarette, and in a friendly tone tells you that he "*only wants to help you.*" He only wants to help you confess. Tell Mr. Nice Guy you want to talk with a lawyer. Another police tactic is to tell you that a friend of yours has confessed and given them a statement implicating you for all kinds of things. They're just trying to rattle your cage and make you blurt something out. Keep your mouth shut and let your attorney handle the police. If they really have such a statement, your counsel will be able to discover it.

If the authorities have a warrant to search your home, they might imply (sometimes none too subtly) that if you do not come across with that they're looking for they will tear the place apart. Don't give in. Just keep your mouth shut. If you hand over your "*prohibited*" weapons, you've just given them all the evidence they need to put you in prison. Even if you fall for this scare tactic, the police may still trash your house. Although this is the rare exception, not the rule, such conduct is not unheard of.

In the event you are on the receiving end of a search warrant, do not be pressured into signing any inventories of property seized without first consulting with an attorney. There might be something on that list that is prohibited according to some obscure regulation that you've never heard of. Also be sure that you or some family member receive an itemized list of any property seized. Under Maryland law the police are obliged to sign one and leave it at the premises from which the property is taken. If it is subsequently determined that the authorities took anything that was not within the scope of their warrant, your attorney should motion the court for its prompt return.

Hopefully, you will never have to avail yourself of the advice set forth above. The best thing you can do to keep the Free State really free is to make a healthy contribution to the cause,...and keep up the pressure on your Delegate and Senator.

Remember, the battle to defend our liberties has already begun – and you are one of the Constitution's foot soldiers.

Dear Peace Officer:

(Note: This was sent to me, and I thought it fitting for this chapter. BTP)

I don't want to kill you. I don't even want to wound you. I admire your courage and the commitment you've made to help others, often at risk of own your life. I hope you won't come for me, because if you do, one of us will die. It may be you. I've done nothing wrong. I don't intend to. But the government that you serve has passed too many laws. I am sure to accidentally break one, some day. And that same government is systematically destroying the unalienable rights which our Constitution says may not be infringed – very specifically, my right to keep and bear arms.

I am not some wacko lunatic, but I can no longer stand idly by, while decent people are systematically enslaved by an out-of-control government. I cannot allow a corrupt judiciary to use its power to destroy my rights and my country. That government and that judiciary has begun to use you to arrest and kill people just like me – people who believe that the Declaration of Independence, the Constitution and the Bill of Rights mean what they say.

You don't know me, but you see me every day. I may be a businessman, a truck driver, an executive. I could be a housewife or a salesman. But I am armed, as Americans have been for over 250 years, and I am determined to keep the freedoms that only an armed people may retain. With a rifle, I can hit a man-sized target at 800 yards. At shorter distances, in the blink of an eye, I can hit a head-size target with a handgun. I don't wear a uniform. I don't drive a marked car. I don't wear camouflage. I could be your own secretary, or your barber. I might be the guy who delivers your bottled water, or the parcel delivery lady. You don't know who I am, or what arms I have, and you never will. I am millions. I am America.

But I know you. I know your uniform, your car, and your work schedule. I know where you work, and where you live. And that is good for you, because not only am I no threat to you, so long as you do the job for which you are hired, I am also prepared to assist you

when you are threatened. There aren't many of me left, you may think, but believe me, there are many, many more than you can imagine. When the chips are down, we are the ones who are truly on your side. On your side, that is, so long as you honor your Oath.

We are on your side if you are one of the majority of peace officers who are not corrupt and who have not sold out to the socialists and communists who will do anything, say anything to destroy the America our fathers and grandfathers bequeathed us. No, I am no threat to you, but your bosses in government don't see it that way. They think that I, and my arms, are a threat to them, and they are planning to send you for me, just as they've sent armed, dangerous officers on select little missions for years, taking out targeted individuals. On their orders, you may succeed in murdering me for my beliefs. Or you may not.

Whether or not you succeed in murdering me, as federal agents murdered Vicki Weaver in Idaho; or as those same federal agents murdered 81 men, women and children at Waco, Texas; there will be others who will rise up in my memory, as I now rise up in honor of the innocent lives taken by the jack-booted thugs and black-clad imitation ninjas who think it is fun to murder Americans – who have somehow become convinced that it is their job to murder Americans.

I am prepared to die, honoring my sacred Oath as an American, to defend and protect the Constitution of the United States of America. Are you prepared to die to violate the Oath you took? You see, our government is out of control. You know it. You've seen it. But you, like many others, have been too concerned with your job, your family, and your pension, to say or do anything about it. Deep down, you know I am right. But you think you must follow orders.

Or must you? Are you going to murder me for having the courage to stand up for the country and the principles in which you believe? Are you going to go along with unconscionably illegal, unconstitutional orders, just as the "good" German soldiers followed their orders? Are you going to be a peace officer or a jack-booted thug? There is little difference between a street outlaw who murders and robs; and a uniformed thug who murders and robs under color of law. The result is the same. Property confiscated, lives ruined,

families ripped apart, murder committed, and a free nation destroyed.

Look at history. Look around the world. As we move toward a lawless society, our country moves closer and closer to anarchy and then some form of fascism. Are you going to enforce unconstitutional laws? Are you going to be the private army of fascist dictators masquerading as democratic representatives? Or are you going to do your part to recapture America? Are you going to keep your eyes and ears open? Will you let me know when the jack-booted thugs in the SWAT teams have targeted me? Will you let your fellow officers know that they are being sold down the river by their corrupt masters? Don't come to kill me. Because I don't want to kill you. If you do come, you may succeed – if you get lucky. But don't count on luck, because it will probably be hard – damned hard. Like millions of other Americans, I am the son or daughter of a nation of riflemen – citizen-soldiers who have a rich heritage of beating the best the enemy can send against us. We are resourceful. We understand weapons and tactics. You are foolish if you intend to be our enemy. If you don't succeed in the long run, and you won't, here's what you can expect:

Ambushes of SWAT teams; the wholesale slaughter of all the jack-booted thugs who have murdered innocent Americans on the orders of their socialist masters; targeted assassinations and kidnappings of antiConstitution judges; assassinations of anti-American, anti-gun politicians.

By your willingness to be a good little Nazi, you will have unleashed a civil war. It doesn't have to be that way. You can do something about it. It's easy. Read the Declaration of Independence, the Constitution and the Bill of Rights. Although you took an Oath to defend them, you don't see much of them in your training, do you? Today, these documents are considered dangerous by the government, just as King George found them dangerous over 200 years ago. Why do you suppose your leaders lead you to oppose the very rights you swore to protect? Why do they want a disarmed public? You know the reason. It has nothing to do with controlling crime. It has everything to do with using you to disarm and control your fellow American Citizens.

Don't fall for it. Don't force me to kill you.
(Signed, 100 Million+ American Patriots)

CCW Coalition: Citizens For A Constitutional Washington
John R. Prukop, Executive Director
11910-C Meridian Ave. E., #142
Puyallup, Washington 98373
(253) 840-8071/8074 fax e-mail: ccw@wolfenet.com

STAY COOL, FOLKS!

We are still trying to educate our "representatives" not only in the *error* of their ways, not merely in the *folly* of their ways, but in the *danger* of their ways. Their self-serving and evil path of citizen disarmament can only lead to one disastrous end – a second civil war which they are destined to lose.

They are destined to lose for one unalterable reason: We have the numbers, and they *don't*. If only 1% of American gunowners are left to fight for Liberty, that would mean 2,400,000 guns in the hands of 750,000 Patriots fighting a guerrilla war on their own territory. Think of it this way: even if the USG were ever 99% successful, it still leaves nearly 21 *times* the IRA's per capita numbers that has fought the British empire to a standstill for generations. (I am not championing the IRA or its terrorism. I'm only noting the historical fact that a handful of riflemen can mire whole armies.) So, please, *enough* whining about future gun confiscation efforts – *they cannot succeed!*

WEALTH vs. LIBERTY

Here's how the 2nd Amendment was *supposed* to work:

*The Second Amendment is a recognition of the danger of standing armies. Its purpose is to recognize that every citizen has the right to keep and bear the same type of basic arms as a soldier in the modern military. A militia embodies all able-bodied men over the age of sixteen. **Therefore, a militia will always outnumber a standing army by at least twenty to one.** If this militia is armed with weapons similar to those used by the individuals comprising the standing army, **it will be impossible for that standing army to inflict the will of a tyrannical government upon the people.** The Second Amendment is the guarantee behind all the other articles in the Bill of Rights. It is the ultimate guarantee that citizens in the United States [of America] will remain free.*

– John Ross; *Unintended Consequences* (1996), p. 47

Well, what *happened*? **If we're so armed, then why aren't we free?** Because too many Americans are *wimps*. Arms are one thing; the *will* to use them is another. The 2nd Amendment doesn't actually assure freedom for it can guarantee neither the citizens' *dedication* to freedom nor their *courage* to maintain it at all costs. No constitutional amendment can do that. As Judge Learned Hand so eloquently explained it for the ages:

*I often wonder whether we do not rest our hopes too much upon constitutions, upon laws and upon courts. These are false hopes, believe me, these are false hopes. **Liberty lies in the hearts of men and women;** when it dies there, no constitution, no law, no court can even do much to help it. **While it lies there it needs no constitution, no law, no court to save it.***

We have grown to love ease and convenience more than liberty. Today, we can hardly be roused over *anything*.

Yes, we did produce a near perfect Republic. But will they keep it, or will they, in the enjoyment of plenty, lose the memory of freedom? **Material abundance without character is the surest way to destruction.**

– Thomas Jefferson

What is lacking in this country is a climate of unrest. A certain air of mewling discontent does exist, but it is too similar to the affectionate bickering young lovers indulge in as they jockey for the role identities that will endure between them for the rest of their married lives. Except for your criminal elements, who through circumstances or choice are the pariahs of any society, **I defy you to find nowadays any of the implacable ferocity** that must have been extant in the Jacobin, Cromwellian, pre-Revolutionary American, and Czarist-ruled societies.

– Oliver Lange, *Defiance* (1971), p. 417

Based on many years of having attended Patriot meetings, I can say with sad certainty that we will not be roused until we suffer a few more atrocities. We will have to reach some point of desperation to wake us. The next Waco-type massacre might do it.

We scaled the mountain but have grown fat, dumb, and lazy on the peak. Now, we're sliding back down. It's a human cycle, and we simply went through it faster than any other civilization, that's all. We're not *quite* through, but getting close.

*Part of any serious program of economic and political survival is that of mental and psychological conditioning. It is not sufficient to stock up on your supplies of dehydrated fruits and gold coins. **The rifle you bought is no better than your determination to use it and your ability to use it.** This means that you have to have some sort of guideline when and under what circumstances to use it. In a time of true terror, which I hope never comes, but which cannot be dismissed lightly, each man must have a mental line drawn, over which his opponent cannot step at zero risk. **The drawing of that line is probably more important than other physical preparations. Where a man's treasure is, there is his heart.** What am I getting at? Simple: all of your preparations should be aimed at preserving your freedom first, and only secondarily aimed at protecting your wealth. Your wealth is simply a tool for expanding your productivity under freedom. **Your wealth must not be allowed to capture you, to chain you to the ground while the wolves plan your demise.** Get this into your mind early: your wealth is your tool to utilize freedom, not your enemy's tool of dominion over you. **The soft underbelly of America is here: our inability to understand the proper use of wealth.** We cling to our wealth as if it could save us in a major crisis.*

We have confused means with ends, and we have worshipped means.

– Dr. Gary North; *The Pirate Economy*, pp. 180-1

Alexander Solzhenitsyn in his profound *The Gulag Archipelago* discussed the necessity of an early resistance to tyranny:

...At what exact point, then, should one resist...? ...How we burned in the prison camps later thinking: what would have things been like if every security operative,

when he went out at night to make an arrest, had been uncertain whether he would return alive and had to say good-bye to his family?

*Or if during periods of mass arrests people had not simply sat there in their lairs, paling with terror at every step on the staircase, but had understood they had nothing to lose and had boldly set up in the downstairs hall an ambush of half a dozen people with axes, hammers, pokers, or whatever else was at hand... **The [police] would have quickly suffered a shortage of officers...and notwithstanding all of Stalin's thirst, the cursed machine would have ground to a halt.***

*If...if... **We didn't love freedom enough.** ...We purely and simply deserved everything that happened afterward.*

Fellow Americans, we ultimately have *nothing to lose*. Quit worrying about your precious stuff – they don't put luggage racks on hearses. Our vast material wealth is Delilah's shears to our strength.

Better a sovereign in squalor than a slave in splendor.

– Dresden James

A slave with weekends off is not 2/7ths free.

– Boston T. Party

I've given much thought to exactly *how* our wealth buys off our independent spirit, and I've a few ideas on resetting our priorities. (And, no, we don't have to live in a cave with one set of homespun clothing.)

HAVING WEALTH AND FREEDOM

Long-term *liberty*, not comfort, is the goal

Modern slaves are comfortable. They don't even have to think for themselves; they only have to do as they're told. If, however, *you* want to deliberately live an "examined life" of your own, then freedom-of-action will supercede comfort. (For now, at least.) Liberty and comfort are *somewhat* mutually exclusive, so choose *now* and quit bitching. Besides, there's a peculiar comfort to liberty, so if you focus on liberty, comfort will follow.

Wealth is expendable

Wealth is not an end, but a *means* for Liberty

Get this through your head *now* if you've chosen Liberty. Regardless of what happens to us after we're dead, it seems fairly well settled that we *don't* get to use our earthly stuff. Our wealth is here while *we're* here, and moot when we're gone.

We don't actually get to own *anything* down here. We just get to *use* it for a few years. Everything is "rented" including our bodies, so treat "your" stuff like that rental car – pedal to the floor. If the tires aren't smoking when you turn it in, then you didn't get your daily \$39.95's worth. Use wealth to maximize liberty for yourself and for your children. Wealth is *expendable*.

Maintain income. Lower living standard.

My income could drop by half and I wouldn't know the difference. Why not? Because I live *beneath* my means. I do not "live for today." I forsake much of the comfort I *could* enjoy today for future value.

Don't waste your disposable income on transitory entertainment and luxuries. Don't put your investment capital in stocks, bonds, or

mutuals. Invest in *yourself* – knowledge, training, and tools – things which will increase your chances of future survival and prosperity.

Your biggest expense is probably shelter. Living beneath your means requires shelter less than you "deserve." Trade down your 5/4 mansion for a 3/2 house, or your 3/2 house for a 3/2 mobile. After a bit of adjustment, you won't miss your fancy digs. As long as your home is sufficiently spacious, warm, and cheery – what else *really* matters? It's all *attitude*, folks.

For example, if you save \$300 per month in rent or mortgage for just one year, then you can buy a .308 FAL battle rifle *and* send yourself to Thunder Ranch. In only one year, you will have acquired something priceless – especially since you will not be *allowed* to buy such a tool or its training for too much longer. Do this for *two* years and you can include 12 months of excellent food storage, a good handgun, and some gold coins. Do this for *three* years, and you can go back to Thunder for Handgun 1 and Urban Rifle 2. Do this for *four* years, and buy a small used RV and store it on somebody's country property. Do this for *five* years, and you can buy a few acres yourself to build on.

Actually, this could be done in just *two* years with deeper cutbacks and harder work. *Backwood Homes* had a story of an Oregon *waitress* who bought some country acreage and built her own log home in just a few years from tips and salary. If you want it badly enough, *anything* can be accomplished. What's *your* excuse – you're not some single waitress in rural Oregon?

You all would be surprised if you knew how modestly I live. This is not to brag, but to reassure you that Boston T. Party "walks the walk." Most Patriot authors *don't*. I know of one who can't find his Mini-14. (Hint: It's either under the entertainment center or behind the waterbed.)

Fractionalize your assets

Have 2x50%, or 3x33% – not 1x100%

Remember our goal: Liberty, not comfort. Americans don't rock the boat because they don't want to lose their precious stuff. Their precious stuff is all in one big basket – and this is tactical leverage

against the owner. One simple raid can clean out the unprepared dissident. He can go from fat and comfy to hungry and cold in an afternoon. The IRS has done this to *thousands* of Americans already.

The solution? Have smaller eggs in several baskets. I recommend living on 50% and having 2 other 25% places. Having half your assets elsewhere does two vital things for you:

1) You won't likely make some tactically futile stand for 50% as you might for the whole 100%.

2) It gives you someplace else of your own to go to if your public/primary domicile gets raided or seized.

What goes in your private hideouts

Most of your guns, food storage, how-to books, "subversive" materials, tools, cash, and gold. These are your "Mr. Hyde" places. Keep your "Dr. Jekyll" home squeaky clean.

What remains in your public/primary home

Guns: only enough to fight your way out. This means at most per person: two handguns and one long gun. Long guns for a family of four (assuming the children are of rifle-bearing age) might be a scoped bolt-gun, two battle rifles and a shotgun. You won't be able to lug anything more than that with you, much less wield it in your two busy hands. Extra guns should be stored at locations 2 and 3. If battle rifles are forbidden in your city/state and you don't want to be at risk, then have instead bolt-action Lee-Enfields or Mausers, or lever-action .30-30s. *Any* decent .30 caliber rifle will do if *you* will do.

Food storage for a month. If a crisis lasts longer than *that*, then you don't want to remain in the city, anyway. Don't prepare to outlast some siege. Get out when (preferably *before*) it looks ugly – you can always go back home later.

Bugout packs for every member. One should already be in every car (including rifle, though maybe not semi-auto). Notarized copies of all important documents. Passports. Spare eyeglasses. Medicines. \$1,000+/person. Small gold bullion coins.

Vehicles: A 4x4 with trailer (already packed with "camping" gear, etc.). Gasoline for at least 600 miles per vehicle (1,000 is much

better). Radios. Spare parts. Tools. Tires. Enough gear to get you out, but not so much to bog you down.

Now, get rugged

You've removed most of the negative tactical leverage of wealth and assets. You are the master of your stuff, not vice-versa. Now, you need to toughen up yourself.

I know many great Patriots and Libertarians who have all the right gear, but no calluses. Gear alone won't do it. **It's the *man*, not the gun. The *man* is the weapon system – the gun is just a tool.** Get to every shooting school you can afford. Take up martial arts, preferably at a *dojo* where there's *lots* of sparring. Shun modern comfort and camp out for a week or two at a time. Go the gym regularly, lose that gut and *get in shape*. Backpack with your rifle – become "as one" with it. *Get rugged!*

PREPARING FOR THE WORST

The strongest reason for the people to retain the right to keep (own) and bear (carry) arms is, as a last resort, to protect themselves against tyranny in government.

– Thomas Jefferson

We are fast arriving at our point of no return – if we're not there already. I see little chance of successful reforms. The Freedom Movement began too late, and we probably *won't* acquire the necessary mass influence for national political change. We're almost assuredly past political solutions, anyway, so let's now focus on what we've probably been forced to resolve ourselves to – a resistance movement.

I estimate that there are about 500,000 hard-core, "*damn-the-tor-pedoes*," liberty-loving Americans who will *never* give in to tyranny. Maybe it's just 100,000. Well, then, what are our chances? What odds do only 100,000 recalcitrant gun owners have? An historical example:

*"Let me summarize: Ireland is an island [about the size of Arkansas]. Residents there have to store their weapons at government-sanctioned gun clubs. Anyone with a relative even suspected of belonging to the IRA cannot own a gun, cannot belong to such a club, and must go outside the country if he wants to shoot at paper targets. The Special Air Service has quite a bit more...latitude in dealing with terrorists than we have here, and the SAS is one of the finest fighting units in the world. It is fully the equal of our own Special Forces. **And for decades, the SAS has been held at bay by a group...similar in number to the spectators at an average American Little League baseball game. Is that about right?"** "Spot on," the SAS Major said...*

– John Ross; *Unintended Consequences* (1996), p. 730

Assuming only the IRA's *per capita* numbers extrapolated here, that still means 36,000 guerrilla fighters (about a third of the 100,000+ I'm certain that actually exist). Although 36,000 is only one in every 2,083 gunowners, it's still a lot of people, numerically. Percentage wise, we're negligible, but that's really only a *political* disadvantage.

There are 240 million guns in 75 million private American hands. **Even if 99% of the guns could be collected, *there would still be 2.4 million left in the hands of 750,000 very upset Patriots.*** Even at a 99.9% confiscation rate, that still would leave 75,000 Patriots (over twice the IRA's *per capita* numbers) with 240,000 guns. Nothing close to 99% will ever be achieved, so what is everybody so jittery about? The simple math of it all means that citizen disarmament cannot happen!

The only guns *successfully* confiscated will be from those owners *who know in advance* that they will never resist – those who value sandwiches over freedom, temporary comfort over indelible honor. The rest of us (and I devoutly hope this includes you) will not – will *never* – give up our arms. If liberty-loving Americans are treated so shabbily *when we have guns*, then how much *more* brutal will the treatment be if we are *disarmed*? If the fedgoons are *this* bold, when they can be easily shot at, imagine their savagery if we give up our guns.

*...Guard with jealous attention the public liberty. Suspect every one who approaches that jewel. **Unfortunately, nothing will preserve it but downright force. Whenever you give up that force, you are inevitably ruined.***

– Patrick Henry, 5 June 1788

No slave shall keep any arms whatever,...

– A Bill Concerning Slaves, Virginia Assembly (1779)

Some thoughts on the bureaucrats

The bureaucrats and politicians do not fear armed criminals or armed political zealots as much as they fear peaceful Americans who will probably never use their [so-called] assault rifles, but whose mental toughness may be enhanced by possession of military weapons.

*The gun controllers are not deterred by the facts about guns and crime, **because their primary fear is not of criminals. They fear ordinary Americans whose lives and freedom their policies are destroying.** In this fear and in their world, they are on target.*

– Arthur B. Robinson, Ph.D.; *Access to Energy*, Vol. 21, #11

The front cover of Dr. Gary North's excellent book *Government By Emergency* beautifully illustrates this point: a bald, wimpy bureaucrat with a clipboard flanked by two thug cops brandishing shotguns to enforce his edicts.

Bureaucrats are weenies. I learned this firsthand in 1991 when I was writing *Good-Bye April 15th!* and had to get some sample IRS forms at their district HQ. Having picked up forms months earlier, I knew in which building they were kept, but what I *didn't* know was that "customer service" had been moved into *another building* entirely. I was at the wrong place. I casually walked past the newly placed security guard and entered. Although no forms were displayed as before and the office had been rearranged, I nonetheless pleasantly and confidently requested to be supplied with the forms on my list. The drones seemed quite confused and asked if I was with the EEOC ("Equal Employment Opportunity Commission"), which confused *me*. When they finally realized that I was a mere member of the *public*, they all but panicked and called for security. I was escorted outside by the same guy who had let me walk right in. You see, they felt all warm and safe and fuzzy because of their "security" – until my visit. I have often savored the memory of their faces flooding with terror, *over nothing*.

Congressmen, judges, bureaucrats – they're all *weenies*. Without their black-suited ninja thugs, they're nothing. If the government pushes things much further, these thugs will have their hands full. **Even if American revolutionaries number to only the IRA's per capita, it still equates to 36,000.** The feds simply don't have enough trained people to handle 36,000 righteously pissed-off Americans. That averages to 720 revolutionaries per state. So relax, but stay alert.

The federal ninja are preparing...

Honed. Honed to a fine edge. Honed to kill!

– a Kansas City FBI agent at Waco, waiting for action

The fedgoons take all this seriously. Long before the OKBombings the *Waffen* FBI ordered almost 2,000 suppressed .308 sniper rifles with night vision scopes. These rifles were made by Brown Precision with AWC suppressors and STANO image tubes. (The feds hope to

"decapitate" the Freedom Movement and gun culture by simultaneously arresting and/or eliminating and several hundred key people.)

This purchase order was placed at the same time the FBI was saying their sniper Lon Horiuchi maybe *shouldn't* have murdered Vicki Weaver, and they would keep tighter control on their "Rules of Engagement." *Wink, wink.* The BATF now has Bradleys. (They *almost* got OV-10D gunships, but *tooo bad!*)

It is my belief that we now have reached the point of diminishing returns in our battle to restore the Constitution. We would serve each other better to spend our time and energy learning how to survive in a country devoid of freedom, which is, I believe, the unstated goal of powerful interests who are now running our nation.

– Colorado state senator Charles Duke

In 1994 the Pentagon's deputy chief of staff for intelligence, a Major Ralph Peters, wrote a position paper *Warrior Class*:

*The desire for patriotism is considered an enemy doctrine. The U.S. armed forces must be prepared to fight against all those who oppose the New World Order and who are holding out for nationalism... This new warrior class is most dangerous because they consist of those who fight out of strong religious beliefs... There is a worldwide class of patriots (i.e., "terrorists") who number in the millions, and if the current trend continues, there may be more of these who...love freedom and are now the target of the New World Order... You cannot bargain and compromise with these warriors... We, as the military, need to commit more training to counter these warrior threats. We must have an active campaign to win over the populace. **This must be coupled with irresistible violence.***

– from the *McAlvany Intelligence Advisor*, May/June 1994

There you have it. Patriotic American gunowners are the #1 Enemy of the New World Order. Since we can't be bargained or compromised with, prepare for "*irresistible violence.*"

DON'T GET SKITTISH!

You will never know how much it cost...[us] to preserve your freedom. I hope you will make good use of it.

– John Quincy Adams

If we are left alone, either by truce or by inefficiency, so be it. However, *if*, despite our best efforts for peaceful privacy and gun ownership, we be hounded unmercifully, if we be raided for our guns – **then give 'em tooth and claw.**

I will not compromise, I will not grovel, I will not toady at the feet of mammon. I will give every man his due. I will honor my word even to my own hurt, and if these be insufficient grounds to be left alone, then somebody will have a seething problem on their hands. I *will* be left alone to cause no harm. I hereby pledge to you my life, my fortune, and my sacred honor that I will die on my feet before I ever cower on my knees. What about *you*?

The final, simple human truth

Today, we need a nation of Minute Men, citizens who are not only prepared to take up arms, but citizens who regard the preservation of freedom to be the basic purpose of their daily life and who are willing to consciously work and sacrifice for that freedom.

– John F. Kennedy, in defense of citizen militias (1961)

As the total subjection of a people arises generally from gradual encroachments, it will be our indispensable duty manfully to oppose every invasion of our rights in the beginning.

– Silks Downer; from *American Political Writing during the Founding Era, 1760-1805*, p. 1071

You *have* no rights unless you are willing to *fight* for them:

*The price of freedom is the **willingness** to do sudden battle, anywhere, anytime, and with utter recklessness.*

– Robert A. Heinlein

I *don't* mean to say that you have no rights *unless* you fight – I mean you must only be *willing* to fight, if necessary. The mere *will* to fight often avoids the fight itself. (Observe your neighborhood dogs on this point.) Obviously, the feds scoff at our will. Guns without the resolve

to use them is perhaps worse than resolve without guns, for it creates a false confidence.

*And yet no weapons, no matter how powerful, can help the West **until it overcomes its loss of will power.** In a state of psychological weakness weapons become a burden for the capitulating side. **To defend oneself one must be ready to die, and there is little such readiness in a society raised in the cult of material well-being.***

– Solzhenitsyn; *Warning To The West*

Never was anything great achieved without danger.

– Niccolo Machiavelli

Most gunowners will wet their pants when the raids come, and the feds *know* it. Many, however, will not.

I don't want to shoot anybody – not even fedgoons. All I'm saying is that it's a real possibility that peaceable folks will be backed into an ugly corner by government – and we should mentally and physically prepare ourselves for this. I'd much rather that awful day never come, but *if* it comes, *fire*.

Fight, and you may die. Run...and you'll live. At least a while. Many years from now, would you be willing to trade all the days, from this day 'till that, for one chance – just one chance to come back here and tell our enemies that they may take our lives, but that they'll never take...our freedom!

– William Wallace before the battle at Stirling, *Braveheart*

I pray for the Lord's wisdom and courage. **We need heroism above all else.** Freedom cannot survive without it, no matter how brilliant a nation's constitution. (Freedom *clearly* cannot survive under *our* Constitution. It wasn't written tightly enough, as I proved in *Hologram of Liberty*. The feds always have a way out of their constitutional "straight-jacket.")

*Keep your overall goal in mind above all. Those who swerve to avoid a few cuts and bruises defeat themselves. Understand from the very minute the fight begins that you're going to take damage. **Accept it.** You'll suffer far worse from the idiots and cowards on your own side.*

– L. Neil Smith; *Pallas*

*I do believe that where there is a choice only between cowardice and [defensive] violence, **I would advise violence.***

– Gandhi

*Strike back when you're strong, and still have your wits about you, and the enemy isn't expecting it. **Give them your teeth, not your belly.***

– John Ross; *Unintended Consequences* (1996), p. 618

The history of liberty is a history of resistance.

– Woodrow Wilson

When the tyrant comes for your guns, after all, you have only one more chance to use them.

– Vin Suprynowicz; *Send in the Waco Killers* (1999), p.308

Live Free or Die.

– New Hampshire state motto

Hey, there's no immunity from historical constants just because we're *Americans*.

PATRIOT LIGHT!

*That, too, was another self-deception,...on the part of those who thought they could get by without toeing the line. I mean the idiocy of the guerrilla business. **That's all it turned out to be: business** – big business American-style, with endless promotion on all the junk, ranging from Geiger counters and do-it-yourself fallout shelters with revolving periscopes to James Bond folding rifles. Distilled water, fancy food concentrates, snakebite kits, vitamins, machetes, sunglasses. Goosedown sleeping bags, alpine rucksacks, Anzac campaign hats, with accompanying literature on how to assemble your own neighborhood Maquis. Batman in the Boondocks. To listen to some, if the day ever came, five hundred thousand citizens, all appropriately Rogue Male types, would melt into the hills, and when they weren't creating havoc among the brutal Occupation forces, they would be practicing the fine art of survival.*

Why, if a survival-and-guerrilla nut brought all the stuff the sporting-goods stores and catalogs said he needed, it would have taken a twenty-five-foot long U-Haul trailer and two weeks of packing to get him out of his damned carport....

There were gadgets...to keep...many men alive and operational, but there was one thing nobody considered – or maybe it was too grim to contemplate and so we conveniently wiped it out of our minds – one thing that had simply gone away from us.

What I'm referring to was the actual collective climate of temperament that existed at any given moment in this country: the real, as opposed to the fancied, state of mind.

*Barring a few million in the armed forces who were coerced into at least perfunctorily practicing bravery in order to gain peer-group approval, **Americans, as it turned out were not tough.** For us to leave comfortable homes and camp outdoors for longer than a week was a major adventure planned far in advance, and then the idea was to make wilderness camp as much like home as possible – tents, portable generators, folding chairs, tables, collapsible crappers, radio, television, the works. **Ché would have flipped.***

– Oliver Lange, *Defiance*, p.83

A third less courage than the regular Patriot!

The spineless sellout "conservatives"

[The Nazis]...came for the Jews, but I wasn't a Jew, so I didn't speak out. They came for the trade unionists, but I wasn't a trade unionist, so I didn't speak out. They came for the Catholics, but I wasn't a Catholic, so I didn't speak out. **Then they came for me, and there was no one left to speak out!**

–Reverend Niemuller

...between freedom and sandwiches, they will choose sandwiches.

– Lord Boyd-Orr

When men reduce their virtues to the approximate, then evil acquires the force of an absolute; when loyalty to an unyielding purpose is dropped by the virtuous, it's picked up by scoundrels – and you get the indecent spectacle of a cringing, bargaining traitorous good and a self-righteously uncompromising evil.

– Ayn Rand; *Atlas Shrugged*

A society of sheep must in time beget a government of wolves.

– Bertrand de Juvenal

Do you know *why* conservatives and Patriots get so upset at the passage of each new oppressive measure? Why do they become so utterly livid at the "assault-weapons"ban, at the *Exclusionary Rule Reform Act of 1995* (H.R. 666), at the "Crime" and the "Anti-Terrorism" bills? Granted, these acts *are* outrageous on their very face, but there's another reason. **They already know that they will likely comply.** Present outrage stems from the imagined pain of their future obedience. They already *know* that they'll redraw their line in the sand.

Folks, draw the line somewhere and keep things in perspective. If Congress passed a bill demanding that you throw your children off a cliff, would you comply – even if the fedgoons tried to enforce it? Of course not! So why is everybody so unhinged about some future gun ban? **Why should we even care, much less get our blood pressure up?** Draw your line in advance, firmly commit to your principles, make plans, and quit howling about what Congress does!

Quit playing Patriot or Libertarian or Republican or free-market advocate. Quit the NRA and sell your guns, assuming you had the nerve to ever own any. **Quit fooling yourself – wimp.** Tear up your von Mises Fan Club Card. Cancel your subscription to the *National Review*.

*The country that draws a broad line between its fighting men and its thinking men **will find its fighting done by fools and its thinking done by cowards.***

– Sir William F. Butler

This is the Conservative Movement today – cuddled up in the American flag. All most folks have ever done is pay smarmy lip service to liberty and play "American" if it's not risky. Example : A man selling a mint pre-ban Colt AR15 at a 1998 gun show for just \$600 was asked why. He replied, "*My son wants a jet-ski.* " (Gosh, at least it wasn't for something frivolous...)

*If ye love wealth greater than liberty,
the tranquility of servitude greater
than the animating contest for freedom,
go home from us in peace.*

*We seek not your counsel, nor your arms,
Crouch down and lick the hand that feeds you;
and may posterity forget that ye were our countrymen.*

– Samuel Adams

If you penny-loafer conservatives – you slaves in splendor – ever had the courage of a housecat, we'd have a free America today. But, no, you chirped for the gilded cage. And you got it – *for all of us*. Our vile "leaders" are not the *real* enemy. *You* are.

The only man who makes slavery possible is the slave.

– John W. Campbell, Jr.

I will not, under the guise of politics, initiate force or steal, and I will resist those who do. I utterly despise thieves, liars, and bullies – *especially* when they sanctimoniously couch their immoral actions under "legal" government authority.

There are whole *families* out there – right now – striving for honest government and responsible leadership while you prance around in your Stars and Stripes costume. Quit playing "American" and step into the ring!

To rebel in season** (i.e., when victory is sure) **is not to rebel.

– Greek proverb

The Eastern Bloc "demonstrations" of 1989 were totally "*in season*" because the Communist regimes *allowed* the people to "rebel" in preparation for the politically-timed demise of the Soviet satellite

governments. I know – I was *there*. They rebelled without risk. It wasn't like the *real* uprisings of 1953 East Berlin or 1989 Tiananmen Square where people were shot and killed for throwing rocks at tanks. Remember the photo of that lone courageous soul who stopped a column of Chinese tanks? Now *that's* desperation. That's *courage!* (The tanks didn't stop for long. They ran him down – made hamburger of him – because he stood his ground. We're not "there" yet.)

[T]he Socialists already have such complete control over the American news media and political processes that it is impossible to change our own government's policies by the customary means of politics and public opinion. (at 151)

We're not advocating revolution – we're advocating counterrevolution! A socialist, one world revolution has evolved over the past few decades to within a few years of total success. (at 224)

– Nolan Wilson, *The Minuteman Handbook* (1999)

There were no "Patriot Lights" on 4 July 1776

The price paid by many signers of the Declaration of Independence was truly staggering:

Francis Lewis had his home burned and his wife tortured by the British for two years. She died shortly after her release.

John Hart's home was looted and burned, his ailing wife died and his 13 children were scattered. He eluded capture by sleeping in caves.

The 1,000 acre estate of **Lewis Morris** was ransacked and burned. His home was destroyed, his cattle butchered, and his family driven off.

Richard Stockton was imprisoned and repeatedly beaten at the brink of starvation. His home was destroyed, his papers burned.

Carter Braxton saw virtually every merchant ship he owned sunk or captured. He was forced to sell off his land.

Thomas McKean "*was hunted like a fox*" and once "*compelled to move my family five times in a few months.* "

Thomas Nelson, Jr. led 3,000 Virginia militia against the British. Redcoats took refuge in his own home, so he turned a cannon on it.

Your assets have already been conscripted by the State. The UN bureaucrats are drooling over your children. **It's 2002 and we're in the calm before the stormtroopers.** Liberty has no friend but the

simple, brave American. Rebel with me, with us, because it's *not* fashionable. Rebel "*out of season*" when it's truly necessary and truly risky. Get involved *now* so that we perhaps don't *have* to give 'em our teeth later.

On too many occasions in the history of civilization, people have accepted authority without subjecting that authority to rational examination. A complacent population leaves itself wide open to control. Eventually the abusive bureaucracy demands too much. The end is either revolt or subjugation. Perhaps the problem is not with the power of the abuser; perhaps the problem is with the individual who is willing to submit. Free men and women need not apologize for being enraged by arrogance in government.

Look into your soul. Corner apathy. Root it out. The darkest hours of human history are marked by muted minutes of indifference. (p. 108)

*I think I know what real courage is. Real courage is to leave that nice chair and walk into the flame of history. Real courage is to fight when there are so many places to hide, so many excuses. The halls of forever are long. Somewhere, far from this time, you may have to look into the eyes of your children once again. Somewhere, far from this time, you may have to look into the eyes of patriots. Somewhere, far from this time, you may have to look into the eyes of the young soldier who never got to hold the tiny hand of his firstborn; **who took the hit for you because he knew that somewhere, somehow, in all the confusion of his youth, freedom mattered.*** (p. 207)

– Bill Branon; *Let Us Prey* (1994)

Get involved *now* so that *you* won't crumple and give 'em your *belly* later. We're all going to die some day. What counts, and what will count, is how you lived your life. How are *you* living *your* life right now? For honor and decency, courageously? Or for comfort, cowardly and shamefully?

These are the times that try men's souls. The summer soldier and sunshine patriot will, in this crisis, shrink from the service of his country; but he that stands now deserves the love and thanks of man and woman. Heaven knows how to put a proper price upon its goods; and it would be strange indeed if so celestial an article as Freedom should not be highly rated.

– Thomas Paine, *The Crisis*, 23 December 1776

How are *you* living *your* life right now? As Jefferson said:

What country can preserve its liberties if their rulers are not warned from time to time that their people preserve the spirit of resistance?

In the dark days of 1941, Winston Churchill admonished:

...this is the lesson: never give in, never give in, never, never, never, never – in nothing, great or small, large or petty – never give in except to convictions of honour and good sense.

If my talk of armed resistance is getting you squeamish – *good*. **It's better to discover your lack of mettle now than later.** Example: A Patriot Light was shopping for a lever-action .30-30 so he'll still have *some* kind of Politically Correct, unbanned rifle after they take away his H&K93. I told him to also shop for a BB gun so he'll have something after they confiscate his .30-30. (Skewered, he saw my point, though I felt like open-handing him across the face just to make it stick.)

Folks, when they come for your "*assault rifles*" either give them up and admit that you were just a wimpy hobbyist – or use them for their true purpose.

Oh, and by the way, decide now, please.

Every oppressed people in history was, at some point, forced to resort to arms. *We* were forced to 225 years ago, and it's almost certain to be our "turn" again very soon. Big deal. That's life. And death is part of life. It goes something like this:

We weren't here.

We were here.

We left.

You and I get 76 trips around the sun and then we check out. The world spun before our arrival, and it will spin after our exit.

What will *you* have accomplished during the interval? Don't let this scenario be your own:

*The feds came for the White Separatists, but I wasn't a White Separatist, so I didn't speak out. They came for the Branch Davidians, but I wasn't a Branch Davidian, so I didn't speak out. They came for the militias, but I wasn't a militia member, so I didn't speak out. They came for the "assault weapons" owners, but I didn't own any "assault weapons," so I didn't speak out. They came for the rest of the gunowners, but I wasn't a gunowner, so I didn't speak out. They came for the holistic health practitioners, the home-schoolers, the ranchers, the Libertarians, the Buchanan Republicans, the Christians, but I wasn't one of them, so I didn't speak out. **Then they came for me, and there was no one left to speak out!***

– any non-Socialist American, a few years from now...

It's *not* how comfortable did you make yourself, or how much money did you earn, but *what* did *you* do to stand against evil?

Courage is the first of human qualities because it is the quality which guarantees the others.

– Aristotle

OUTRAGE, THEN COURAGE

If you want a picture of the future, imagine a boot stamping on a human face – forever.

– George Orwell; 1984

*We are trying to reinforce to them (the Branch Davidians) that we (the FBI) are in charge of the situation, that the compound (sic) is under the complete control of the Government. It is in fact no longer their compound (sic); that we have the ability to exercise whatever control we want over that compound (sic), and we will do that at various times to demonstrate to them the fact **they are impotent in their ability to control their everyday lives.***

–Bob Ricks, FBI spokesman at Waco, April 1993

These, muh (BTP Note: She nearly said "military"), uh, pieces of equipment (the CS-injecting tanks from Ft. Hood, Texas) were unarmed, as I understand it, and were contracted...I mean, it was like a good rental car. Uh, they were...

(Attorney General Janet "For The Kids" Reno) **Ah, a good...a good rental car? A tank going into a building?**

(Congressman Bill Zeliff; R-NH) **Uh, ah, ah...** (Attorney General Janet "For The Kids" Reno)

– from the House hearings on Waco

Men that are above all fear, soon grow above all shame.

– Trenchard and Gordon, *Cato's Letters* (1755), vol. I, p. 255

A 2nd AMERICAN REVOLUTION?

*The Clinton era has spawned an armed militia movement involving tens of thousands of people. The last time anything like this occurred was in the 1850's with the emergence of the southern gun clubs. It is easy to dismiss the militia as right-wing nuts: it is much harder to read the complex sociology of civic revolt. **At the very least, the militias reveal the hatred building up against the irksome yuppies who run the country.***

It is under this president that domestic terrorism has become a feature of life in America, culminated with the destruction of the Oklahoma Federal Building on April 19, 1995. What set the deadly spiral in motion was the Waco assault two years before, and the cover-up that followed.

– Ambrose Evans-Pritchard, 1997 letter to America

Look, I am *not* advocating an armed rebellion or the lynching of officials. What I *am* saying is *this*: Do not cherish your own life or property *so much* as to be bought at the price of *slavery*. Quit worrying about your precious skin! As William Wallace said in *Braveheart*, "**Every man dies. Not every man really lives.**"

*What country can preserve its liberties if their rulers are not warned from time to time that their people preserve the spirit of resistance? **Let them take arms...** What signify a few lives lost in a century or two? The tree of liberty must be refreshed from time to time with the blood of patriots and tyrants. It is its natural manure.*

– Thomas Jefferson; 13 November 1787, *Papers* (12:356)

You are a sovereign human being, created by God with unalienable rights as much a part of you as your lungs. **It is *not wrong* to defend these rights, force against force.**

*A strict observance of the laws is doubtless one of the highest duties of a good citizen, **but it is not the highest.** The laws of necessity, of self-preservation, of saving our country when in danger, are of higher obligation. To lose our country by a scrupulous adherence of written law, **would be to lose the law itself**, with life, liberty, property and all those who are enjoying them with us...*

– Thomas Jefferson; 20 September 1810, *Human Events*

Our lives are not blank checks for government. Our backs were not made to be saddled nor our mouths to be bridled! *We* are the sovereigns – *they* are the *servants*. When government is afraid of the people, it's *Liberty*. When people are afraid of the government, it's *Tyranny*. What our "last straw" will be, I do not know. Perhaps some new "*Anti-Terrorism*" Act with its suspension of *habeas corpus* and its new death penalties will snap the camel's back.

*Those who profess to favor freedom, and yet depreciate agitation, are men who want crops without plowing up the ground. They want rain without thunder or lightning. They want the ocean without the awful roar of its waters. This struggle may be a moral one; or it may be a physical one; or it may be both moral and physical; **but it must be a struggle. Power concedes nothing without demand.***

Find out just what people will submit to, and you have found out the exact amount of injustice and wrong which will be imposed upon them; and these will continue until they are resisted with either words or blows, or with both.

The limits of tyrants are prescribed by the endurance of those whom they oppress.

– Frederick Douglass, a self-freed black slave, in 1857

I do not seek an armed rebellion, but I will *not* live as a *slave*. Not in *America*. Nor will I run off to Costa Rica in silly hopes of freedom, as if tyranny won't try to become global. (Besides, they wouldn't let me in with my guns...)

*Individuals obtained recognition of their freedom by fighting and bargaining, or – failing in this – they could run away. This running was possible **because they had somewhere to go.***

– L. Neil Smith; *Pallas*

Folks, America is truly the last stand. There is nowhere else *to go*. I will stay here and *work* for freedom.

*If a nation values anything more than freedom, it will lose that freedom; and the irony of it is that if it is comfort that it values more, **it will lose that too.***

– W. Somerset Maugham

Liberty is always unfinished business.

– anonymous

*If you will not fight for right when you can easily win without bloodshed; if you will not fight when your victory will be sure and not too costly; you may come to the moment when you will have to fight with all the odds against you and only a precarious chance of survival. There may be even a worse case. You may have to fight when there is no hope of victory, **because it is better to perish** [free] **than to live as slaves.** (As did Jews on 19 April 1943 in the Warsaw Ghetto uprising. They killed 80 Nazi troops! BTP)*

– Winston Churchill

We're probably already at that "worse case. " In *Hologram of Liberty* I described how our constitutional system has allowed a federal stranglehold on *America*. But the *real* culprit *hasn't* been the Constitution. **We've only ourselves to blame.**

We *should* have strung up Congress for handing monetary control to a private consortium of bankers and then dragging us into

WWI in 1917. We *should* have resisted in the 1930s during FDR's atrocious "social" programs and the confiscation of our gold. We *should* have shouted down the 1945 U.N. We *should* have pushed through the righteous tax revolt of the late 1970s instead of accepting the sop presidency of Ronald Reagan. We *should* have hounded out the Clintonistas after their murder of the Branch Davidians. Etc. Etc. *Etc.*

The only times when we stood up to the Government were in 1794 (Whiskey Rebellion) and 1860 (the secession of the South over economic autonomy – not slavery). Other than that, we have *chickened out* on a dozen crucial opportunities to rein in Washington. **Evil has triumphed because good men have done *nothing*.** We've become a paper tiger and Congress is no longer afraid of us. The servant now scoffs at his master, and the servant's bulldog routinely sinks its teeth in our legs.

If there's one constant to bullies it's that they're *bluff*. Knock their teeth in suddenly and they crumple every time. It's only difficult and scary the *first* time. All they need is some long-overdue fear and they'll run.

For example, the French could have nipped WWII in the bud by calling Hitler's 1936 Rhineland bluff. We could have easily pushed the Soviets out of Germany, Poland, Austria, etc. in 1945, kept our military strong, and avoided the Cold War. We certainly could have rolled into East Berlin in 1961 and smashed the barbed-wire wall with righteous impunity. (What starts out as barbed-wire is soon replaced with *concrete!*)

Jefferson spoke of occasional mild rebellions for a America's health. Rebellions are sort of like vomiting. The *prospect* is very unpleasant, but you feel so much better *afterwards*. We've been so queasy with political poisoning for so long, but we won't hug the toilet and stick a finger down our national throat. **We're so afraid of vomiting that we'd rather stay queasy.** Well, if we wait to vomit on the *poison's* timetable, we will be too weak and ill to recover by then.

We must heal ourselves – while we are *able* – or expire.

BOSTON IS NUTS!

I want to give you Liberals, Neo-Cons, and other coercive collectivists a final chance to understand the Freedom Movement's mindset. Your political agenda, enforced by government thugs, *created* the Freedom Movement. We did not create you – you created *us*.

Had you modern Tories been content to let peaceable folks alone to raise their own children, control their own schools, attend church unmolested, use their own property, shoot their own guns, pay *reasonable* taxes and keep their own wages, and generally live their own lives – there wouldn't *be* a Freedom Movement. Such is superfluous in free countries. Thanks to you, America is now Land of the Fee, Home of the Slave.

As *kulaks* (Russian peasants who owned land and businesses, liquidated by Stalin in 1929) we have never injured you, but our independent spirit irritates your controlling nature. Since you Know Best, since it horrifies you that Americans actually have the *nerve* to live without your license, you have nearly bridled this glorious mustang of a people. We will never take your saddle. You will never be our jockey. *Never*.

You're probably too committed to hear reason. You're probably too confident to believe the tremors. Nonetheless, for the sake of fairness and conscience, I offer you this warning:

[Liberty minded people are] *all the same*. And the kicker is, every single one of us believes that as honest adult citizens, we have the absolute right to own any and all

small arms and shoot them just as often as we want. **We have a specific culture.** Guns and shooting are very important to us, just like...hunting buffalo was important to the Indians....

Our culture is important, and we're willing to pay for it. We have above-average educations, above-average incomes, and almost nonexistent criminal involvement. We pay far more taxes and receive virtually no subsidy payments. You'd think Washington would be happy, but instead they are doing everything they can to destroy our culture.

In the '20s, soldiers sat on their bunks in the cold at Camp Perry, cleaning the handmade .22 target rifles they would compete with the next day. When the President proudly announces that today, seventy years later, he is ordering these same guns thrown into a blast furnace, we in the gun culture feel powerful emotions. **They are the same emotions a Native American would feel if the President proudly ordered the destruction of war clubs and other sacred tribal artifacts. They are the same emotions that the Jews felt watching...Nazi Sturmtruppen gleefully burning intricate copies of the Torah.**

We offer to buy the government's surplus guns, and instead they pay to have them cut up. We offer to buy their surplus military ammo, shoot it, sell the brass to a smelter, and give the government the proceeds, and instead they pay to have it burned.

These government slugs ban our guns and they ban our magazines and they ban our ammo. They ban suppressors that make our guns quieter and then they ban our outdoor shooting ranges because our guns are too loud. They ban steel-core ammunition because it's "armor piercing", then they close down our indoor ranges where people shoot lead-core bullets because they say we might get lead poisoning.

The people in the gun culture have a better safety record than any police department in the nation, but several states actually prohibit us from using guns for self-protection, and in all the other states except [Vermont] they make us buy a license. They tax us so we can have more cops, and when crime still goes up, they tax us more and ban more...guns.

[We] endure waiting periods that no other group would stand for. We undergo background checks that no legislator, judge, doctor, or police officer has to tolerate, and we submit to it not once, or once a year, but over and over again. Then, after we yield to this outrage, they smile and forbid us from buying more than one gun in a 30-day period.

If we sell one gun we own that's gone up in value, they can charge us with dealing in firearms without a federal dealer's license, which is a felony. If we get a dealer's license, they say we are not really in business, and report us to our local authorities for violating zoning ordinances by running a commercial venture out of a residence.

If the steel or the wood on our guns is too long or too short, they make us pay \$200 taxes and get fingerprinted and photographed. They make us get a law enforcement certification from the local police chief. If he refuses to sign we have no recourse. If he takes the forms in the next room and brings them back out, signed, he can later claim the signature is not his, and the feds will charge us with a felony.

We in the gun culture have played all their stupid games on [National Firearms Act of 1934 licensed fully-automatic] weapons for over half a century, without a single violent crime being committed by any person in the system. So when a bill comes up to keep travelers with guns locked in the trunk of their cars out of jail, what happens?

A scumbucket from New Jersey,...puts an amendment on it that closes down the whole NFA process.

Then, if they even suspect we've ignored the \$200 tax process altogether, on the guns where the wood and steel is too long or too short, they'll spend over a million dollars watching us for months, then they'll shoot our wives and children (i.e., Ruby Ridge) or burn us all alive (i.e., Waco). When the public gets outraged by these actions, the government issues letters of reprimand and sends the guys who did the killing on paid leave. In the decades that the feds have been raiding and killing people in the gun culture over suspected non-payment of \$200 taxes, not one federal agent has been fined a single dollar or spent even one night in jail.

And you know something else that's never happened? To this day, not a single person in the gun culture has ever dropped the hammer on one of these feds. Not once.

Then, after these statist bastards have done all these things, they grin and tell us how they like to hunt ducks, and how the only laws they want to pass are "reasonable ones."

One of two things [is going to happen]. One of the political parties is going to have to wake up, smell the coffee, and start restoring all the articles in the Bill of Rights – the Second, Fourth, Fifth, and Tenth Amendments.

[And if that doesn't happen], then we're going to have a civil war. (at pp. 555-6)

Stripping a motivated people of their dignity and rubbing their noses in it is a very bad idea. (at p. 9)

– John Ross; *Unintended Consequences* (1996)

In no time in history has an oppressive government been so thoroughly and fairly warned *to back off*. Not even the 1770s English were. When you weren't playing deaf to our pleas, you scoffed at them. We have not resorted to violence. We have only *rarely* resorted to righteous *self-defense*. No oppressed people, with the arms to resist, have ever been more patient. Your greed for Power and Control has dried up our tolerance.

Americans will *not* take much more. Don't expect us to merely whine about the tune you fiddle while Rome burns. We won't let you strike the match. Your goons fight only for their next paycheck. *We* will be fighting for our culture, our rights, and our lives. Many in your military will defect.

You will *lose*. America is the greatest potential guerrilla base in history. You have transformed thousands of normal Americans into Patriots who spend every waking hour planning for your rout. One is Elmer Wade, a 61 year old farmer in North Carolina, whose farm you stole because of your conflicting regulations between the EPA and the Soil Conservation Service:

*I am writing this letter so you won't have any surprises. Through no fault of my own I am being put upon. **I've had all I can stand from you in the front, and I do not plan to roll over.** So when you send your collector, have That Woman send your WACO KILLERS with them. They will need them. **Living is not very much fun with you standing on my neck.***

– quoted from *Send in the Waco Killers* (1999), 237

You are making guerrillas out of whole families, counties, and states –*that's* how serious Civil War 2 will be, if you continue your oppression. **"Stripping a motivated people of their dignity and rubbing their noses in it is a very bad idea."** Keep squeezing us – keep fueling our desperation – and we'll make Afghanistan look like a spitwad fight. We have been preparing for your Soviet Amerika since the 1970s. Many of us are combat veterans, or have military experience. We have land, food, tools, guns, friends, and an unquenchable fire for Liberty.

You don't believe this, of course, and that's good. Because of our patience and long suffering, you continue to underestimate your opponents. You're in for a rude shock.

*Again, it is under Clinton that an armed militia movement involving tens of thousands of people has mushroomed out of the plain, an expression of dissent that is unparalleled since the southern gun clubs before the Civil War. People do not spend their weekends with an SKS rifle, drilling for guerilla warfare against federal forces, in a country that is at ease with itself. **It takes very bad behavior to provoke the first simmerings or armed insurgency, and the militias are unmistakably Clinton's offspring.** Would they have happened if America were governed by a President Tsongas or a President Bush? Of course not.*

What is it about the combustible chemistry of Bill Clinton that causes such a reaction? What has he been doing to America?

The original sin, I believe, was the FBI assault on the Branch Davidian community in Waco, Texas, on April 19, 1993. At least 76 people were incinerated, most of them women and children, after FBI tanks went smashing through the walls of Mount Carmel. The death toll adds up to the worst tragedy precipitated by government on American soil in this century. You have to go back to the slaughter of 200 Sioux Indians at Wounded Knee in 1890 to find an abuse of power on this scale. Just like Waco, Wounded Knee was designated a "battle" by officials; and just like Waco, the victims were demonized as sexual deviants. Some methods never change.

– Ambrose Evans-Pritchard, *The Secret Life of Bill Clinton – The Unreported Stories*, p.xiv (1997)

You politicians have broken your American pact with us. Government was to be a means to an end, *not an end in itself* We merely *delegated* our sovereignty to federal officials for courts, Congress,

and national defense – *not* to be viciously ruled within our own homes, schools, businesses, and churches.

*The United States owes its existence to the Bill of Rights. Were it not for the Bill of Rights' explicit promise to limit government power over the citizenry, the U.S. Constitution would never have been ratified. Americans in the Revolutionary Era would only permit a national government to come into existence if...that government would solemnly pledge to limit their power in perpetuity. But this sacred compact is now violated by thousands of officials at all levels of government. **If the government will not keep its pact with the people, what do the people owe the government?***

– James Bovard; *Lost Rights*, p. 333

You have broken your sacred trust, and you will pay a price far higher than that of tyrants. You will pay the *traitor's* price.

Even if you *do* successfully disarm the people, materially and spiritually, you will still lose. The more responsibility you take away from them, the more irresponsible they will become. At some point, you will reap the inverse of "*People have the government they deserve*" – you governors will have the *people* you deserve (and I suspect this has *already* begun to occur). In *On Liberty*, John Stuart Mill put it well:

*A State which dwarfs its men, in order that they may be more docile instruments in its hands even for beneficial purposes will find that **with small men no great things can really be accomplished**; and that the perfection of machinery to which it has sacrificed everything will avail nothing.*

Either way, you *will* lose, and that's the lovely irony of it all. Whether you geld or tolerate this independent mustang of the American people, you will lose. Either way, our presence *or* our absence will destroy you. (Irony's a bitch, ain't it?)

Back off.

Back off, now, before you step into the abyss.

Back off, *now*, while you are *allowed* to.

45

RESOURCES

Note: The listing of the following resources does *not* imply full and unqualified endorsement of the same. *Caveat Emptor!* People are verbs, and even good companies can sour, so please do your own research.

BOOKS

Molôn Label, Boston T. Party

Published in January 2004. See you in Wyoming!

Unintended Consequences, John Ross

A fantastic novel about American gunowners pushed too far by the feds. Unnecessarily raunchy in parts and totally dismissive of any possible conspiracies, it's still "must" reading. Allegedly back in print.

Civil War 2, Thomas Chittum

A Vietnam vet and professional mercenary makes a compelling case for America cracking at her ethnic seams in about 20 years. Not at all a racist book, but wholly logical. A very timely and unique title. From Loompanics.

101 Things To Do 'Til The Revolution, Claire Wolfe Don't Shoot the Bastards (Yet) – 101 More Things To Do 'Til The Revolution, Claire Wolfe

Fun and zippy stuff full of practical ideas and morsels of hilarious wisdom. For *Don't Shoot's* Introduction, I contributed a rather piercing essay on the difference between Action Libertarians and Egghead Libertarians.

The State vs. The People: The Rise of the American Police State, Claire Wolfe and Aaron Zelman

Published by www.jpfo.org in 2002, this is Claire's newest (and best) book. An incredibly sweeping, detailed, and infuriating analysis of our emerging totalitarianism. I had a difficult time finishing the book simply because of the outrages so richly described. Things are worse than even I had thought. \$19.95ppd.

Lost Rights, James Bovard

An excellent, sweeping overview of mindless federal tyranny. Not a Patriot work, but it might as well have been. Infuriating reading. At any bookstore.

His sequel, *Freedom in Chains*, is also excellent.

***Defiance*, Oliver Lange**

Originally titled *Vandenberg*, this utterly absorbing novel describes Amerikan life in the U.S.S.A. and what a handful of average folks do about it. A must. At any used bookstore.

One curious thing: In the movie *Arlington Road*, the bomber's name was Oliver Lang. An intention slap in the face?

***The Moon Is A Harsh Mistress*, Robert A. Heinlein**

The best novel I've ever read about a successful rebellion. A lunar penal colony in 2075 revolts from its Earthly masters. A marvelous story deserving to be a movie! At used bookstore s.

***The Probability Broach*, L. Neil Smith**

A real romp of a novel in which tandem-dimensional Americas exist – one Jeffersonian, one Hamiltonian – and battle each other. Great fun! From Laissez-Faire Books.

Followed by *The Gallatin Divergence*.

***Snowcrash*, Neal Stephenson**

It's about 2050 in L.A., and the country has splintered into city states, fiefdoms, and enclaves. Virtual reality is *the* reality, which makes for a very odd society. The subplot of a *coup* via a neurolinguistic virus is fascinating.

***The Diamond Age*, Neal Stephenson**

It's about 2150 in Shanghai, and nanotechnology is the primary force of existence. Governments have all collapsed, only to be replaced by sophisticated and elaborate tribes. The Central Economic Protocol (a libertarian commercial and criminal code) is the glue between them all.

***Cryptonomicon*, Neal Stephenson**

His best work to date, and likely unsurpassable. A sweeping and totally engaging story of WWII encryption, hidden Japanese war gold, and an emerging data haven offering digital currency. One of the five best novels I've ever read.

***Kill Zone*, Craig Roberts**

A Vietnam vet and police sniper looks at the JFK assassination at Dealey Plaza in Dallas. Highly recommended.

The Medusa Files, Craig Roberts

Roberts examines the PanAm bombing, Oklahoma City, the Amtrak derailing, Waco, and many other suspicious events which the feds have used to justify further controls. A sweeping and fascinating catalog of likely government complicity.

Patriots, Rawles

An informative and tidy tale of survival against tyranny.

Send In the Waco Killers, Vin Suprynowicz

Ballad of Carl Drega, Vin Suprynowicz

A superb essay collection of Nevada's leading libertarian columnist. I mined many excellent nuggets from this fine book. Uncompromising, sweeping, and witty stuff! From Mountain Media (POB 4422, Las Vegas, NV 89127-4422).

***Safeguarding Liberty – The Constitution & Citizen Militias,*
edited by Larry Pratt of Gun Owners of America**

A superb collection of essays on the 2nd Amendment. Visit GOA's Web Site at www.gunowners.org.

***Target Switzerland: Swiss Armed Neutrality in
World War II, Stephen P. Halbrook (Sarpedon Press)***

A fascinating study of how well a citizen militia works.

***The Samurai, The Mountie, and the Cowboy: Should America
Adopt the Gun Controls of Other Democracies?,
by David B. Kopel (1992)***

This was named Book of The Year by the American Society of Criminology. A ground-breaking work.

Dial 911 and Die, Richard Stevens

The police are not required to protect any individual! A unique and cogent work on how governments avoid legal responsibility for their poor police forces. Its State-by-State analysis of court rulings is devastating. From JPFO.

Death by "Gun Control": The Human Cost of Victim Disarmament, Aaron Zelman & Richard W. Stevens

Devastating nation-by-nation proof that disarming a people is historically a prelude to their genocide. An utterly unanswerable treatise. \$16.95ppd. from JPFO.

The Mitzvah, L. Neil Smith and Aaron Zelman (JPFO)

A Catholic priest discovers that he is Jewish, and thus rethinks his feelings on guns and pacifism. A fine and tidy little novel which should be given to any 2nd Amendment agnostic.

Invisible Resistance to Tyranny, Jefferson Mack

How to fight tyranny yet still appear to the State like a good, little citizen. Thought-provoking stuff. Paladin Press.

To Ride, Shoot Straight, and Speak the Truth, Jeff Cooper

A collection of fascinating essays on guns, travel, hunting, and philosophy from the Professor of the Modern Shooting Technique. I recommend all of Jeff's books. Paladin Press.

Art of the Rifle, Jeff Cooper

An excellent book on a long-overlooked subject, the Queen of weapons, by one of the Masters. From Paladin Press.

Life Without Fear, Mike Dalton and Mickey Fowler

An excellent beginner's book on the use of defensive handguns. Written by staff of the International Shootist Institute, it has dozens of superb pictures to complement its thorough coverage of lethal confrontations. \$14.95 ppd. Call 818-891-1723.

Street Stoppers, Marshall and Sanow

A sequel to their *Handgun Stopping Power*, it gives the latest results of hundreds of shootings in every major caliber. Includes the

seminal Strasbourg Goat Tests and a chapter on MagSafe Ammo.
From Paladin Press.

***The Ayoob Files: The Book*, Massad Ayoob**

Good cross-section of 30 shooting incidents.

Novels

Since America is unraveling at her seams, I've included many novels which dramatize political upheavels. Books in bold are my favorites.

Disaster preparation

Lucifer's Hammer, Niven and Pournelle

Farnham's Freehold, Robert Heinlein

Pulling Through, Dean Ing

Resistance movements with at least a somewhat happy ending

Atlas Shrugged, Ayn Rand

The Moon Is A Harsh Mistress, Robert A. Heinlein

Weapons Shops of Isher, A.E. vanVogt

Unintended Consequences, John Ross

Mirror Maze, James P. Hogan

The Gallatin Divergence, L. Neil Smith

Pallas, L. Neil Smith

When The Almond Tree Blossoms, David Aikman

Patriots, Rawles

The Postman, David Brin

The Ashes novels by William W. Johnstone

The Survival of Freedom, Jerry Pournelle

Kings Of The High Frontier, V. Koman (www.pulpless.com)

Paul Revere's Ride, D.H. Fischer

The Battle of Athens, Tennessee, Byrum

Libertarian utopias

Alongside Night, Schulman

The Probability Broach, L. Neil Smith

Voyage of Yesteryear, James P. Hogan

Molôn Labé!, Boston T. Party (published January 2004!)

Resistance movements with a less-than-happy ending

Defiance (also titled *Vandenberg*), Oliver Lange

Animal Farm, George Orwell

Amerika, Pouns

Let Us Prey, Bill Branon

Resistance, Israel Gutman

The Whiskey Rebellion, Thomas Slaughter

Dystopias

This Perfect Day, Ira Levin

1984, George Orwell

Brave New World, Aldous Huxley

Anthem, Ayn Rand

Man In A High Castle, Philip K. Dick

Oath of Fealty, Niven and Pournelle

The Trial, Franz Kafka

MOVIES AND VIDEOS

Red Dawn

A modern classic. Alpine high-schoolers fight the Communist invasion of America. An utterly unique film.

Amerika

Powerful mini-series on the Soviet takeover of the U.S.A.

Heat

Robert de Niro heads a team of bank robbers using battle rifles. The rifle fight in downtown L.A. is particularly well done. Director (and Gunsite graduate) Michael Mann's films are known for their realism, attention to detail, and intensity.

misc. videos

Militia of Montana (406-847-2735)

Ask for the video with official footage of *Operation Cooperative Nugget* at Ft. Polk, Louisiana where 4,000 soldiers of 14 Eastern European countries learned how to shoot American flag T-shirted *civilians*, many of whom are women and children. Also shows footage of the "nonexistent" American detention camps for us dissidents. M.O.M. also carries my books. Great folks.

Waco – The Rules of Engagement

This is the new documentary film, 136 minutes long, which has been sweeping the country at film festivals. It is so good, so convincing, that even California liberals are upset at the feds. It's now out on video. Get a copy and invite a crowd over to see it. Infrared footage of machine-gun firing executioners of trapped Davidians, feds caught lying through their teeth, a charred child bowed backwards from the hydrogen cyanide gas poisoning, *60 Minutes* refusing to touch the issue – wow! If this is ever aired on national TV, there will be a revolution the next morning. From Laissez-Faire Books.

Waco – A New Revelation

877-511-4848

A superb new documentary that picks up the story with information uncovered in 1999: that pyrotechnic devices *were* used at Waco, and that Delta Force soldiers were there pulling triggers. The FLIR evidence is much bolstered, too. If the tape is ever shown on national TV, it would mean the end of the regime. This video is a must in every American home!

FLIR Project

A Mike McNulty sequel to *Waco – A New Revelation*, which trashes the Government's staged reenactment of Waco. Using the FBI's own FLIR imagery, McNulty proves that the Branch Davidians were machine-gunned by ground and air personnel on 19 April 1993 during the fire.

The veracity of this was confirmed personally to me by an active-duty special forces operator who watched *Waco – A New Revelation*. During the viewing he remarked, "*See how the helo pitched up just before the muzzle flashes? We tell the pilots to do that to stabilize the helo as a shooting platform. That was definitely full-auto fire – they (i.e., the video's producers) are right on the money.*" He also personally identified many of the Delta operators filmed at Waco – "*D-boys*" as he called them.

Available from Paladin Press.

Braveheart

Mel Gibson portrays William Wallace, the George Washington of 14th century Scotland. Outstanding!

The Patriot

Mel Gibson does it again! The *Braveheart* of the American Revolution. A beautiful and savage story of what it took to win our freedom. The movie has a perfect pace, drama, and deft realism. Take your family and friends to see this astonishing film!

Michael Collins

Liam Neeson portrays the 1920s founder of the IRA and its guerrilla resistance to the British occupation.

The Parallax View

A 1976 film with Warren Beatty. A corporation seeks out unstable sociopaths to be groomed for assassination duty. An eerie, disturbing film. (You'll have to special order it, as it suspiciously does not show up in most movie catalogs.)

A similar scenario is probably used today to create these mass murdering gunmen (many of whom, it's rumored, were on *Prozac* – "delayed violence") and killer schoolchildren (nearly 100% of whom, such as Kip Kinkel, were on *Ritalin* and/or *Prozac*). *Prozac's* side effects can include: apathy, hallucinations, hostility, irrational ideas, paranoid reactions, antisocial behavior, hysteria, and suicidal thoughts.

A fine book on the subject is *Talking Back to Prozac* by Peter R. Breggin, M.D. whose organization *Children First!* fights against biopsy-chiatric intrusions into our children.

The Manchurian Candidate

A 1963 feature film starring Frank Sinatra. An American soldier from the Korean War is brainwashed and molded into a sleeper assassin of a presidential nominee. *Way* beyond its time. Frank personally had it suppressed for years, claiming that showing the film after JFK's assassination was distasteful. (Yeah, *right*. Whaddaya bet Frank got a little visit?)

Executive Action

A 1973 feature film on how JFK was likely assassinated. As a rifleman and mystery buff, I've been to Dealey Plaza and read many books. This film dramatizes a highly credible theory. If the Insiders succeeded in 1963, just imagine how much better they are at it *today*. (They're still pretty sloppy – Ruby Ridge, Waco, Vince Foster, Oklahoma City, etc.)

Conspiracy Theory

A backhanded spoof on us nutty folks, yet with enough plausibility to remain interesting and thought-provoking. There *are* scheming Bad Guys, after all. *Gee, who 'da thunk it?*

Dial 911 and Die

A 29 minute video interview of author Richard Stevens, who explains your responsibility for self-protection. Available from www.jpfo.org (800-869-1884).

MAIL ORDER BOOKS

Underlined companies carry my books.

Bloomfield Press www.bloomfieldpress.com

Great books explaining state and federal gun laws.

Laissez-Faire Books www.laissezfaire.org

A Libertarian/Objectivist oriented, highly intellectual catalog company. Top quality "food for thought."

Liberty Tree 800-927-8733 www.independent.org

The book catalog by the Libertarian think-tank *The Independent Institute*. A good selection of erudite material.

Eden Press 800-338-8484 www.edenpress.com

A smaller, but more personal, alternative book catalog company. A good source for privacy and ID material.

Delta Press 800-852-4445 www.deltapress.com

New distributors of my all books, including *Good-Bye April 15th!* and *Hologram of Liberty*. Many fascinating titles.

Lancer Militaria 870-867-2232

Owner Jack McPherson is a true military history buff who scours the globe for unique titles. Great catalog.

Paladin Press 800-392-2400 www.paladin-press.com

Titles on weapons and tactics. They also carry all of my books but for *Good-Bye April 15th!* and *Hologram of Liberty*.

Fred's 919-663-2027
(Wed.) www.fredsm14stocks.com

He carries about a dozen of Freedom's best books, often at the best price. A Rifeman and Patriot. Call on Wednesday only.

Knowledge = Freedom 702-329-5968

This is the Freedom Movement's "Yellow Pages." With over 2,000 listings (alphabetized and cross-referenced by subject matter and state/city), this continually updated compendium is a labor of love by Dennis Grover. A must.

CPA Book Publishers **503-668-4941**

They carry nearly every Patriot/Freedom book.

Information Exchange **800-346-6205**

Good selection on a variety of topics.

Militia of Montana **406-847-2735**

Good selection of anti-NWO and survival books, gear, etc.

Gunowners of America **www.gunowners.org**

Great folks who carry *Boston's Gun Bible*.

JPFO **800-869-1884** **www.jpfo.org**

Founded by Aaron Zelman, a hard-working Patriot. They have been publishing some marvelous books lately, and their *Gran 'pa Jack* comic series is brilliant.

NEWSLETTERS & MAGAZINES

Shotgun News

Published thrice monthly, the FFLs' source list. A "must."

Gun List

National classified ad gun paper. Excellent resource. *GL* and *SGN* are found at gun shops, gun shows, and newsstands.

S.W.A.T.

Keep abreast on what the turbo-cops are up to. Good coverage of new gear and tactics.

SHOOTING GEAR

BlackStar Barrel Accurizing **218-721-6040**

Electro-polishing of rifle bores to increase accuracy.

Brownells **515-623-5401**

Fantastic catalog of parts and accessories. Best service in the business. Get your Ashley Outdoors sights and scope mounts here. They carry *Boston's Gun Bible*.

CFI **817-595-2485** www.cfiarms.com

A great "one-stop" mail-order firm which handles most of the quality gun firms: Scattergun, Knights, ARMS, Choate, Sure-Fire flashlights, ArmaLite, Bushmaster, etc.

Cheaper Than Dirt **888-625-3848 (mention the GOA)**

America's leading sports discounter, which donates a percentage of your total order to the Gunowners of America if mention the GOA during a phone order, or when you enter their online store at: www.cheaperthandirt.com/goa.htm

300 Below, Inc. **800-550-CRYO**

Cryogenic treatment of rifle barrels to relieve stress.

D&L Sports **POB 651** **Gillette, WY 82717-0651**

Dave Lauck builds very fine custom 1911s and rifles.

Dillon Press **800-223-4570** www.dillonprecision.com

The best progressive reloading presses. Top quality with the best return/service reputation in the business.

Life Line (long-distance service) **800-311-2811**

Why support anti-gun phone companies like AT&T and Sprint when there's a pro-2nd Amendment alternative? Life Line gives 10% of every call to Gun Owners of America. Call today and switch your long distance service!

Major Surplus & Survival **800-441-8855**

Good selection of outdoor survival gear.

Midway **800-243-3220**

Reloading equipment and shooting accessories.

Premier Reticles **540-722-0601**

They install the Mil-Dot reticle on scopes.

Sierra Supply **970-259-1822**

Absolutely *best* prices on new and quality used mags for M14 and M16. Also carries much web and surplus gear.

Robar, Inc. **602-581-2648/582-0059fax**

Corrosion-resistant finishes. Grip reduction for Glocks. M1A mags in bolt guns. "Snout" (scout/sniper) .308 rifles.

Shomer-Tec **360-733-6214**

Fascinating selection of police and spy stuff.

Tapco **800-554-1445** www.tapco.com

Lots of gun parts and accessories.

The Survival Center **800-321-2900**

Interesting survival gear.

U.S. Cavalry **800-777-7732**

Great color catalog. Tactical Heaven.

GUN AND PARTS DISTRIBUTORS

They run ads in *Shotgun News* and *Gun List*. While you must order their guns and receivers through your local FFL, sometimes it's the only way to acquire something too new or uncommon to be found in the unpapered used market.

A.R.M.S.	508-584-7816	www.armsmounts.com
Burns Bros.	516-234-7676	
Bushmaster	800-998-7928	www.bushmaster.com
CDNN	800-588-9500	
Century Arms Intl.	800-527-1252	www.CenturyArms.com
CFI	817-595-2485	www.cfiarms.com
<u>Cheaper Than Dirt</u>		www.cheaperthandirt.com
Classic Arms	800-383-8011	
DPMS	800-578-3767	
DSA Inc.	847-223-4770	www.dsarms.com
Fred's M14 Stocks	800-979-2144	www.fredsm14stocks.com
Fulton Armory		www.fulton-armory.com
Gun Parts Corp.	914-679-2417	www.gunpartscorp.com
J&G	520-445-9650	www.jgsales.com
Northridge	800-678-3931	www.northridge.com
Samco	800-554-1618	
Sarco	908-647-3800	www.sarcoinc.com
SOG	800-944-GUNS	
Springfield Armory		www.springfield-armory.com
<u>Tapco</u>	800-554-1445	www.tapco.com
World Wide Gun Parts		www.gun-parts.com

WEB SITES

www.i2i.org

The Independence Institute. Great stuff, with great links.

www.laissezfaire.org

Great links.

www.oughtsix.com

Look for their fabulous jpg (picowee6) of "Troops obeying Orders. Citizens obeying gun laws."

www.shooters.com

The most complete source of shooting info on the Net.

www.law.cornell.edu/uscode

Search within the entire U.S. Code

www.findlaw.com/scripts

Search for any legal case.

GROUPS & ORGANIZATIONS

Victim Disarmament Groups

It is recommended that you visit their websites regularly, to keep up with our enemies.

Coalition to Stop Gun Violence (CSGV)

Educational Fund to End Handgun Violence (Ed Fund)

1000 16th Street, NW

Suite 603

Washington, DC 20036

(202) 530-0340

<http://www.gunfree.org>

CSGV is a 501(c)(4) lobbying organization founded in 1974 as the National Coalition to Ban Handguns. Endorses banning the sale and private possession of handguns in America. Founded in 1979, the Educational Fund to End Handgun Violence is the 501(c)(3) educational arm of the Coalition. The Ed Fund operates the Firearms Litigation Clearinghouse, which maintains a database of depositions and court documents of firearm-related cases.

Handgun Control, Inc. (HCI)

Center to Prevent Handgun Violence (CPHV)

1225 Eye Street, NW Suite 1100

Washington, DC 20005

(202) 898-0792

<http://www.handguncontrol.org>

Handgun Control, Inc. (HCI) was founded in 1974 by Mark Borinsky, who was later joined by Nelson T. "Pete" Shields. Shields founded the Center to Prevent Handgun Violence (CPHV) in 1983, which is the education, legal advocacy, and research affiliate of HCI. In 1985 Sarah Brady became its primary spokesperson and in 1989 succeeded Shields.

Violence Policy Center (VPC)

1350 Connecticut Avenue, NW, Suite 825
Washington, DC 20036
(202) 822-8200

<http://www.vpc.org>

A really noisome group headed by Josh Sugarmann.

Government Agencies

Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco and Firearms (BATF)

650 Massachusetts Avenue, NW
Washington, DC 20226
(202) 927-7777

postmaster@atfhq.atf.treas.gov

<http://www.atf.treas.gov>

The Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco and Firearms (ATF) is a law enforcement organization within the United States Department of Treasury. ATF enforces the federal regulations relating to alcohol, tobacco, firearms, explosives, and arson.

Bureau of Justice Statistics (BJS)

National Center for Justice Research Statistics (NCJRS)

810 7th Street, NW
Washington, DC 20531
800-732-3277

askbjs@ojp.usdoj.gov

<http://www.ojp.usdoj.gov/bjs/>

The Bureau of Justice Statistics (BJS), a component of the Office of Justice Programs in the U.S. Department of Justice, is the United States' primary source for criminal justice statistics. BJS collects, analyzes, publishes, and disseminates information on crime, criminal offenders, victims of crime, and the operation of justice systems at all levels of government.

National Centers for Disease Control and Prevention (CDC)

1600 Clifton Road, NE
Atlanta, GA 30333
(404) 639-3311

<http://www.cdc.gov>

The National Centers for Disease Control and Prevention (CDC) is located in Atlanta, Georgia, and is an agency of the Department of Health and Human Services.

Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI)

935 Pennsylvania Avenue, NW
Washington, DC 20535-0001
(202) 324-3000

<http://www.fbi.gov>

The FBI is the principal investigative arm of the Department of Justice. At present, the FBI has investigative jurisdiction over violations of more than 200 categories of federal crimes. The FBI is also authorized to provide other law enforcement agencies with cooperative services, such as Uniform Crime Reports and the National Crime Information Center.

National Center for Health Statistics (NCHS)

6525 Belcrest Road
Hyattsville, MD 20782
Telephone: (301) 436-8500
Email: nchsquery@nch10a.em.cdc.gov
Website: <http://www.cdc.gov/nchswww/nchshome.htm>

The NCHS is a part of the Centers for Disease Control and Prevention, U.S. Department of Health and Human Services. NCHS is the federal government's principal vital and health statistics agency.

Pro-Bill of Rights Groups

American Shooting Sports Council (ASSC)

9 Perimeter Way, Suite C-950
Atlanta, GA 30339
(404) 933-0200

www.assc.org

The ASSC is the "*organized voice of the firearms industry*" and was established in 1989 to "*take pro-active steps to enhance the industry's ability to do business..., improve the public perception of*

the industry as a whole, and...provide a viable voice in the hearings preceding debate of statutes affecting the industry. " Its slogan is "As Pro-Gun as Our Customers. "

The statute affecting the industry that resulted in ASSC's formation was a partial federal "assault weapons" ban sponsored by former Senator Dennis DeConcini (D-AZ) in 1989. Believing that none of the traditional pro-gun organizations were effectively defending the manufacturers of such weapons, the ASSC was formed as "*the only voice in the Capital that lobbies specifically for our industry. "* Its promotional material promises that "*as a sophisticated registered lobby organization, ASSC monitors legislative trends and proposals at every level of government. We ACT BEFORE legislation is passed or opinions are formed. We are Pro-active not Re-active ! "*

Citizens Committee for the Right to Keep and Bear Arms (CCRKBA) and the Second Amendment Foundation (SAF)

James Madison Building
12500 NE Tenth Place
Bellevue, WA 98005
(206) 454-4911 (CCRKBA)
(206) 454-7012 (SAF)

<http://www.ccrkba.org>

The CCRKBA is a 501(c)(4) lobbying organization founded in 1974 by activist Alan Gottlieb "*to defend the Second Amendment of the United States Constitution and to provide aid and information to individuals throughout the Nation seeking to maintain the right to keep and bear arms.*" The Second Amendment Foundation (SAF) is the 501(c)(3) educational arm of CCRKBA and was founded by Gottlieb in 1974. Periodicals owned by SAF include *Gun Week* and *Women & Guns*.

Gun Owners of America (GOA)

8001 Forbes Place, Suite 102
Springfield, VA 22151
(703) 321-8585

<http://www.gunowners.org/>

Gun Owners of America (GOA) is a 501(c)(4) lobbying organization formed in 1975 to *"preserve and defend the Second Amendment rights"* of gun owners. Associated with GOA are: Gun Owners of America Political Victory Fund, Gun Owners of California, and The Gun Owners Foundation.

Jews for the Preservation of Firearms Ownership (JPFO)

2872 S. Wentworth Avenue
Milwaukee, WI 53207
(414) 769-0760

<http://www.jpfo.org>

JPFO was founded in 1989 by Aaron Zelman. The organization works to *"expose the propaganda and myths used by all anti-gunners, but particularly by some Jewish anti-gunners."* JPFO's key argument is that the *Gun Control Act of 1968* was taken literally from the gun control laws of Nazi Germany and that gun control is a prerequisite to genocide.

National Rifle Association (NRA)

11250 Waples Mill Road
Fairfax, VA 22030-7400
(800) 672-3888

<http://www.nra.org>

The NRA is the best known and most powerful organization working against firearm restrictions in America. The NRA is a 501(c)(4) lobbying organization with an estimated 2.8 million members that describes itself as *"the foremost guardian of the traditional American right to keep and bear arms."* The NRA's Institute for Legislation Action (ILA) advocates *"against federal and state gun legislation to protect and defend the Constitution of the United States, especially with reference to the rights of the individual American citizen to acquire, possess, transport, carry and enjoy the right to use arms."* Other related NRA organizations include the NRA Special Contribution Fund, International Shooter Development Fund, American Firearms & Shooting Foundation, Firearms Civil Rights Legal Defense Fund, National Firearms Museum Fund and The NRA Foundation.

**National Shooting Sports Foundation (NSSF)
Sporting Arms and Ammunition Manufacturers Institute
(SAAMI)**

11 Mile Hill Road

Newtown, CT 06470-2359

Telephone: (203) 426-1320 (NSSF)

Telephone: (203) 426-4358 (SAAMI)

www.nssf.org

NSSF is the leading trade association of the firearms industry. The NSSF was formed in 1961 as a non-profit communications and marketing organization that manages a variety of programs designed to promote a better understanding of the shooting sports, as well as encourage participation in the shooting sports. In 1983, the NSSF created the Women's Shooting Sports Foundation (WSSF).

**Project Appleseed
Revolutionary War Veterans Association
(www.rwva.org)**

POB 756

Ramseur, NC 27316

A not-for-profit project to implant the traditional American skill of rifle marksmanship in a new generation of Americans. Like Johnny Appleseed, after whom the project is named, and who traversed the country planting appleseeds, not so he could have apples, but so future generations could have apples, the RWVA travels the country, putting on week-end-long marksmanship clinics to teach rifle marksmanship. Cost of attendance is minimal, just enough to cover costs, less than a hundred bucks! **And age 20 and under shoots free**, as do military personnel with military ID, and elected officials!

The instruction comes with a healthy dose of American history, summed up in the RWVA motto: "*April 19, 1775, when Marksmanship met History, and Liberty was born...*" Participants have perceived the event as a combination of learning to shoot and a revival of Americanism in the old-time, traditional sense. A sense of pride in our history, along with a feeling of debt that we all owe the

Founders, not to let liberty die on our watch. Be sure to watch for an Appleseed in your or a nearby state, and make sure you attend! If you want to see this program succeed, you can make tax-deductible donations to the address above.

Molôn Labé! excerpt

Logan, Utah

January 2010

Frank Edwin Swan is a gun owner. Federal NICS records (that is, the ones which by law are to be destroyed after the purchaser's background check has been approved) show that Swan had purchased a Bushmaster AR15 and Beretta 92 in 1999. Thus, the FBI are expecting .223 and 9mm firepower. They do not know that in 2003 Swan bought a thick green paperback book which changed his life. He sold his AR and Beretta at a large Salt Lake City gunshow and traded up to a Springfield Armory® Squad Scout M1A™ .308 battle rifle and a .45 Glock 21. These guns he legally bought from private sellers with cash, thus creating no NICS records at all.

The .308 is over twice as powerful as the .223, and can perforate much more cover. One round from a .308 will drop a man for good, whereas a .223 needs two to five rounds. Similarly, the .45ACP is a significantly better stopper than the 9mm, especially when using FMJ.

Swan's Glock 21 needed nothing but tritium night sights. Before retiring for the night, he always attached to the frame rail a powerful tactical white light. Over 70% of defensive gunfire happens at night, so being able to illuminate your threat was paramount. Legally, morally, and tactically you cannot shoot at anything not positively identified as a legitimate threat.

Because it was an American-made rifle with no pistol grip, a post-ban M1A could (under the 1994/2004 "*Crime Bill*") have a flash

suppressor. Swan replaced the stock part for a Smith Enterprise Vortex. Made of forged 8620 hardened steel (just like the M1 and M14), the Vortex was brutally strong and totally eliminated muzzle flash from the 18" barrel. Thus, Swan would not blind himself during a nighttime gunfight.

With a hunting 5 round magazine, his defensive M1A even doubled as a deer rifle if necessary. Finally, he mounted the XS Sights 24/7 tritium stripe set, an Aimpoint CompM2 red-dot sight, and a SureFire tactical light.

Next, Swan experimented with different surplus ammo until he found that Portuguese FMJ was the most accurate in his rifle. Sold by mail order in 1,000 round lots for only 15e7round delivered, Swan bought several thousand rounds. He could not even begin to reload his own ammo for 15e7round, especially for what his time was worth. His friends kidded him for buying so much, but Swan had learned from that big green book that "*ammo turns money into skill*" and that it was preferable to have 900 rounds of skill and 100rds of ammo, versus 1,000 rounds of ammo and no skill.

Possibly being in a gunfight means risking incoming fire, so Swan thought it prudent to buy a bulletproof vest. He learned to avoid any vest made of Zylon or Goldflex (which permanently degrade from humidity and light over time, and got several cops killed or injured before being recalled). Kevlar aramid was the only way to go. Level IIIA protection (which will stop nearly all handgun rounds) was the best balance between cost, protection, and wearability. He picked a US Armor IIIA with a Level IV (rifle protection) titanium shock plate.

The vest carrier was also important. For home defense, he chose a police tactical model which had a built-in holster and several utility pouches. The garment hung on his bedpost by his nightstand. Also on the bedpost were a pair of Peltor electronic shooting muffs which amplified inaudible sounds but blocked out gunfire. Wearing his Peltors, Swan could clearly hear a whispered conversation in another part of the house. (He proved this with friends one evening, to their stunned amazement. They all bought their own.)

His final item of apparel was a bedside pair of slip-on boots.

If ever woken up in the middle of the night by something suspicious, Swan would need less than fifteen seconds to put on his boots, vest, and ears, to investigate matters. His M1A was under the bed if he needed it quickly.

Although his child support and alimony payments took much of Swan's income, he worked overtime for many months in order to afford training back in 2004 at the world-renowned defensive shooting academies of Gunsite in Arizona and Thunder Ranch of Texas. The handgun and rifle courses cost nearly \$ 1,000 each in tuition, not including travel, ammo, lodging, etc. Swan considered the money well spent – the training invaluable. He felt confident that he could defend himself during a lethal emergency.

Unbeknownst to him, he would soon have his chance to find out.

Washington, D.C.

J. Edgar Hoover FBI Building

January 2010

The Assistant Director of the Criminal Investigation Division grimaces at the mountain of folders on his walnut desk. Violent Census 2010 protests, attacks on Federal Reserve officials and buildings, and civil unrest. *It never ends!* Jerome Devereaux oversees all intrusive techniques, such as wiretaps, Magic Lantern insertions, "sneak and peek" warrants, long-term undercover ops, stings, etc. He picks up two folders from the top of the stack. The proposed joint raids in Utah and Wyoming. He's been under tremendous pressure for over a year to produce an arrest in the Krassnyite phenomenon.

Finally, western agents are ready to search and question two suspects. They are both gun owners and members of 2nd Amendment groups. Both harbor anti-government views.

Both had been to Denver near the time of the three abductions.

Devereaux knows that the probable cause is based only on weak circumstantial evidence, but the Bureau cannot continue to be accused of "doing nothing." Not when judges, congressmen, and VIPs are being kidnapped and murdered at the rate of two a month.

The AD signs off on the two raids as Active SCI (Sensitive Compartmented Information). US Attorneys in Casper and Salt Lake City would strictly curtail dissemination of the case details.

Maybe we 'll get a break.

Then the American people will see the Bureau taking action.

Positive public perception is the FBI's greatest asset. The Bureau learned this most poignantly as it had been gradually lost during years of scandals of Ruby Ridge, Waco, Whitewater-gate, Jewell-gate, Foster-gate, Laptop-gate, Missing MP5s-gate, 9/11-gate, Crime Lab-gate, etc.

It all began with Ruby Ridge. Back in the mid-1990s, Director Louis Freeh personally deemed HRT SWAT sniper Lon Horiuchi's second shot (which struck Vicki Weaver in the face and killed her) as "*unconstitutional*" but did not censure him.

It would have greatly dampened HRT morale.

No, the FBI must stand by its own. If it didn't, who would?

Freeh put great pressure on the Justice Department to kill the manslaughter charge filed by the state of Idaho. It worked. The matter was moved to federal court against Idaho's wishes, where it died by judicial decree. Federal agents have "*sovereign immunity*" while enforcing federal law and cannot be held responsible by the states or the people.

All who were paying attention got the message.

The Republic is dead. The gloves are off.

Logan, Utah February 2010 4:28AM

FBI agents from Salt Lake City, Boise, and Pocatello have descended upon the sleepy neighborhood of Frank Edwin Swan. The FBI for weeks had surveilled the diesel mechanic, who lived alone since his divorce eight years ago. Intelligence showed that he awoke regularly at 0530 on weekdays. Accordingly, the FBI chose to execute the raid when he was most likely at the bottom of his longest and deepest REM cycle of delta sleep. Swan would be groggiest then. That meant 0430.

Salt Lake FBI SWAT "got the ticket" for the dynamic entry. They are "jocked out" and "on line" at Phase Line Yellow, the forward rallying point. They will not bother to knock.

"No knock" warrants were originally authorized by the Supreme Court only to: prevent the easy destruction of evidence, protect lives (e.g., hostages), or prevent the escape of a dangerous suspect.

Additionally, police are not required to knock/announce if the suspect already knows that the police are present.

None of these factors apply to Swan, but federal judges generally give the FBI whatever they request. Utah authorities were especially cooperative with the Government since the 2002 Winter Olympics. When the Salt Lake FBI SAC made the point that Swan was wanted for questioning in the abduction of three Denver men (one of them a sitting judge), the Federal District Court judge immediately approved a no-knock search warrant.

The softly snoring Frank Swan is aware of none of this.

Eighty-six yards away FBI SWAT commander Raymond Wilcox switches his encrypted Motorola headset radio to the channel used by the entry teams. "TOC to all units. You have compromise authority and permission to move to Green."

The SWAT operators begin to surround Swan's small home. Phase Line Green is their final position before dynamic entry. Team White will enter the front and Team Black the back. Simultaneously. (They don't call it "dynamic entry" for nothing.) Team Green will cover the left side and Team Red the right. These color codes for target buildings are standard SWAT jargon. The area is cordoned off for two blocks by over twenty FBI agents, sheriff's deputies, and police. Two ambulances are standing by. So many men and vehicles are bound to rile up the neighborhood dogs.

near Lander, Wyoming 4:29AM

FBI agents from Casper, Rock Springs, Laramie, Cheyenne, and Lander have converged on the small farm of Kyle and Susan Bradford. They timed the raid with Swan's so that the subjects could not warn each other. The Bradfords live at the end of a remote county road, and their nearest neighbor is several hundred yards away behind a small knoll.

For the FBI, it was ideal. Seclusion was preferred for such raids. It not only limited risk of collateral damage, but the subjects could be isolated from interfering third parties such as friends, media, etc. As the Weaver family learned at Ruby Ridge, a remote homestead is a mixed blessing.

Logan, Utah 4:30AM

Several dogs up and down the street begin to bark from all the activity, waking a blue heeler at the foot of Swan's bed. His intelligent brown eyes are alert, his ears radar dishes swiveling about. The dog jumps to the floor and runs to the bedroom window. He sees several dark shadows moving stealthily by his master's house. His low, soft growl snaps Swan instantly awake from a very deep sleep. After seven years he knew every nuance of every bark and growl. This growl meant *Danger!*

"What is it, Otto?" Swan whispers hoarsely. Otto is still on point, softly growling at the window. Still in sweatpants, Swan gets up and peeks slightly through the top of the drapes. *Shit! Burglars!* He forces himself to take deep breaths as he dons his emergency gear. He is dressed in seconds.

He unholsters his Glock and does a blind system check of mag and chamber. Holding the .45 in his right hand, he removes the magazine with his left and touches the top round with his index finger. Loaded. The ISMI chrome-silicon mag spring would last years fully depressed. He reinserts the magazine with a *Tap-Tug*. Fully seated. Then he grabs the middle of the slide with his left hand and pulls it back about a half inch. With his middle finger he feels the partially chambered round. He pushes the slide forward, feeling the flush barrel lockup to ensure that it's in battery. A man should be able to load, unload, check, and clear his weapons by tactile feel only. During a gunfight you cannot risk taking your eyes off your threats.

Swan sees his tritium night sights as the decaying hydrogen isotope of H³ glows reassuringly inside its hardened sapphire vials. Swan reholsters the Glock. Fourteen rounds of Triton 200 grain hollowpoints. Night sights. Tactical light. Bulletproof vest. Peltors. Boots.

All Swan needs now is the proper *mindset* – the most important ingredient for victory. Without a fighting spirit the best gear is irrelevant. *With* a fighting spirit you can defend yourself with a rolled-up newspaper.

Always Cheat. Always Win. The only unfairfight is the one you lose.

He is halfway down the hall before he recalls something his Thunder Ranch instructor Clint Smith once said. From Swan's memory a small piece calves off: *There is a big difference in being in a fight and going to a fight. You get caught in a fight with a handgun. You go to a fight with a rifle.*

Why fight with 14 rounds of .45 when you can fight with 20 rounds of .308? Besides, rifles are much easier to hit with during great stress.

Swan stops in mid-stride, returns to his bed, holsters his Glock, and grabs his M1A. Again, he does a blind system check of mag and chamber. He keeps the rifle in Condition One, meaning cocked and locked. His instructors taught him that he may not have the luxury of time or silence to chamber a first round. Thus, a home defensive rifle should be kept in Condition One. Very few gunowners know to do this and the ones who do are often uncomfortable – feeling it's "dangerous" to keep a cocked and locked rifle in the house. Swan knows better because he has been trained better.

With the 11½ pounds of stock and steel in his hands he feels immensely more prepared. What a difference a *rifle* makes. He walks down the hall with his M1A shouldered in the High Ready position, safety off, trigger finger straight. His left hand is underneath the forestock – thumb on the flashlight's momentary ON/OFF rubber button.

near Lander, Wyoming

4:30AM

Raid leader Scott Malone checks his watch and nods to his men. An entry man with a battering ram steps forward on the front porch. There will be no knocking at the Bradford farm, either.

Logan, Utah

Commander Wilcox makes a radio call to his men. All silently click in to communicate that they are standing by at Green.

The White Team leader hand signals "breacher up!" and an operator moves forward with a sawed-off 12 gauge Remington 870 pump shotgun loaded with Hatton rounds. The powdered lead shells were specifically designed for safely blowing apart door hinges.

Wilcox checks his watch. It is precisely 0430. He looks at his Special Agent in Charge, who nods. Wilcox presses the transmit button and speaks.

TOC to all units. I have control. Stand by. Five. Four. Three.

near Lander, Wyoming

Five agents are "stacked" just beside the door's left jamb. Malone holds up his non-gun hand and counts down from five to one. Their tension doubles as they anticipate being released in seconds, like a coiled spring.

Logan, Utah

Two. One. Execute. Execute. Execute.

Swan is twenty feet from the kitchen back door when his home explodes from both ends with a stereophonic crash. His Peltors blank out from nearly a second of sonic overpressure. Both front and rear doors blow off the jambs and fly inside in a shower of splinters.

Home invasion!

Gruff voices are screaming but Swan cannot make out the words amidst the smoke and confusion. The front doorway is blocked by the heavy sofa which Swan had pushed aside earlier that evening for vacuuming. It is his great fortune that he'd been too tired to move it back. Because of the sofa, the armed men in front are delayed entry.

Cover! Swan ducks in a left-side bathroom doorway, keeping his rifle pointed down the hall towards the kitchen. He has an overwhelming urge to begin shooting at the burglars he knows are just a split-second away, but forces himself to wait for visibly armed and hostile threats.

Through the kitchen door several dark gun-carrying forms in black ski masks pour inside. Swan lights up the one in front, quickly takes up the first stage of the M1A trigger, focuses on his front sight, and squeezes out the rest of the trigger pull. *Front sight! Press! Front sight!* What happens in an eyeblink seems to take hours, but time distortions usually occur when you are fighting for your life. After a mini-eternity his rifle finally *Booms!* Swan sees and hears his assailant hit in the lower chest with the 2,500 foot pound impact of a

rifle bullet at nearly point-blank range. As he falls, Swan visually picks up the front post through the Aimpoint, which he has not yet turned on. *Front sight! Press! Front sight!*

near Lander, Wyoming

The Bradfords' front door is bashed in and federal agents immediately pour through the house. *FBI! FBI!* They approach the master bedroom in an urgent tangle of flashlight beams as Kyle Bradford groggily reaches for his Ed Brown Kobra .45 on the nightstand.

Logan, Utah

Two other intruders become instantly visible and Swan shoots them both in the head within .52 seconds of each other. He notes that he saw his front sight before and after each shot, just like he was trained. The terminal ballistics of a .308 round to the human cranial cavity are stupefying. Their heads literally burst with loud *Thwhops!* and the men collapse like string-cut puppets. The kitchen walls are instantly painted in gore.

Swan hears much barking, pistol fire, and shouting from the front of his home and is suddenly aware of his dog attacking intruders in the living room. *Otto is buying me time!* He swats down the impulse to save his dog and instead rushes down the hall towards the kitchen, muzzle leading the way.

He remembers to switch on the Aimpoint, and its small orange-red dot comes immediately to life. Battery life of the CompM2 is literally thousands of hours, and the unit is quite rugged. Even if the device failed he could still use his iron sights. For the first three intruders he *had*, having forgotten all about the Aimpoint.

A fourth invader suddenly appears through the kitchen doorway, his Oakley goggles covered with the blood and brain matter of his colleagues. Screaming something unintelligible at the top of his lungs, he muzzles a black subgun at the homeowner. The FBI are not accustomed to being shot at during raids, and this agent, shocked at the deaths of his comrades, has forgotten to identify himself.

Swan marvels at burglars who can afford Heckler & Koch MP5s while centering the red dot on the invader's chest as he presses out the trigger. The impact makes an dull clanging sound, but the man drops instantly. Swan steps over the four bodies and stops next to the doorway. He has a difficult time not slipping on the tile. The kitchen floor is slick with blood, its copper stench heavy in the air with the smell of burnt gunpowder and hot brass.

The magnitude of events presses upon Swan's consciousness but he is too busy. *The answer to fear is preoccupation. Solve your problem!* He is more than preoccupied, he is furious. *They started this party, but I am going to finish it for them!*

He flips a wall switch, and a porchlight illuminates two other men partially concealed behind small trees. They immediately pour bursts of 9mm subgun fire at the rear of the house, shooting out the light. Through his Peltors Swan hears raspy chirps of the suppressed MP5s, their winking muzzles strangely captivating. 147 grain slugs shatter the kitchen window, raining glass on the besieged homeowner. *May your enemies be on full-auto!* as Jeff Cooper said. Single well-placed shots are what win battles.

Swan crouches, pies out slightly past the right door jamb, quickly lights up the kneeling man on the left and fires three aimed rounds through the tree. FMJ zip through the small tree as if it were balsa wood, striking the man behind and causing him to expose more of himself. *Shoot what is available, while it is available, until something else becomes available.* Swan fires twice more, knocking the man over in a lifeless sprawl.

Five down, one to go.

near Lander, Wyoming

FBI! Hands up, now! scream three agents more or less in unison. As the Bradfords are blinded by the powerful tac lights, Kyle slowly withdraws his hand from the .45 and pulls Susan to him. Agents yank away the down comforter and plaid flannel sheets to expose the terrified, naked couple, and roughly drag them from their warm bed. They are handcuffed and herded to separate areas of the house.

"Susan, say nothing to them!" Kyle yells from the hallway.

"Shut the fuck up, you!" snarls an agent as he shoves Kyle along.

In the background, Bondo the parrot is squawking at full volume.

Logan, Utah

From behind Swan a raking burst just over his head showers him with shards of dishes. *They 're making their way from the front!* Swan understands at once that he will be overcome by the men coming down the hall. His world is violent chaos and it's getting worse by the second. He must flee and find cover *now*. He can take the remaining guy in the yard, but not the several in the house. There is Danger in front, but Death is clearly behind him. No choice but to charge the Danger. This clarity is oddly comforting...

by **Kenneth W. Royce (Boston T. Party)**

Modules for Manhood

(2014)



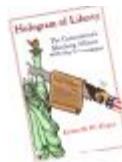
What Every Man Must Know (Volume 1)

What do women want? What does America need? *Men!* Do you want to become a capable well-rounded man? Learn your unique Purpose in Life, and how to achieve it? Start your exciting journey today!

360 pp. softcover (2014) \$27 + \$7 s&h (cash, please)

Hologram of Liberty

(revised for 2012)



The Constitution's Shocking Alliance with Big Government

The Convention of 1787 was the most brilliant and subtle *coup d'état* in history. The nationalist framers *designed* a strong government, guaranteed through purposely ambiguous verbiage. Many readers insist that it's Royce's best book. A jaw-dropper. Revised for 2012 and Obamacare.

360 pp. softcover (2012) \$27 + \$7 s&h (cash, please)

You & The Police!

(revised for 2009)



The definitive guide to your rights and tactics during police confrontations. When can you refuse to answer questions or consent to searches? Don't lose your liberty through ignorance! This 2009 edition covers the *USA PATRIOT Act* and much more.

168 pp. softcover (2009) \$16 + \$5 s&h (cash, please)

One Nation, Under Surveillance

(2009)



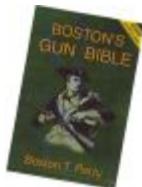
Privacy From the Watchful Eye

Explains precisely how to lay low from snoops of all types. Extremely thorough on computers, data, Internet, VoIP, digital gold, and prepaid cellphones. This is the huge replacement of his 1997 *Bulletproof Privacy*. Boston retired in 2009; this was his last new title.

480 pp. softcover (2009) \$27 + \$7 s&h (cash, please)

Boston's Gun Bible

(new text through 2009)



A rousing how-to/why-to on our modern gun ownership. Firearms are "*liberty's teeth*". No other general gun book is more thorough or useful! Indispensable! Covers the *D.C v. Heller* case. Our best seller.

848 pp. softcover (2002-2009) \$33 + \$7 s&h (cash, please)

Molôn Labé!

(a novel)



If you liked *Unintended Consequences* by John Ross and Ayn Rand's *Atlas Shrugged*, then Boston's novel will be a favorite. It dramatically outlines an innovative recipe

for Liberty which could actually work! A thinking book for people of action; an action book for people of thought.

It's getting people moving to Wyoming! www.freestatelyoming.org

454 pp. softcover (2004) \$27 + \$7 s&h (cash, please)

Safari Dreams

(2008)



A Practical Guide To Your Hunt In Africa

Possibly the most useful "one book" for making your first safari. Thoroughly covers: rifles, calibers, bullets, insurance, health, packing and planning, trip prep, airlines, choosing your PH, shot placement, and being in the bush. Don't go to Africa without it!

352 pp. softcover, 100 color photos (2008) \$30 + \$5 s&h

www.javelinpress.com

www.javelinpress.com

NOTE: Please verify pricing *and* address from our website *before* ordering!

Prices <u>each</u> copy:	<u>Retail</u>	<u><40%></u>	<u><44%></u>	<u><50%></u>
<i>Boston's Gun Bible</i> 5 1/2"x8 1/2" 848 pp. 1/2009	1-5 copies \$33	6-7 \$20	8-15 \$18.50	case <u>16</u> or more \$16.50
<i>Modules for Manhood - 1</i> 5 1/2"x8 1/2" 360 pp. 3/2014	1-5 copies \$27	6-13 \$16	14-27 \$15	case <u>28</u> or more \$13.50
<i>Molôn Labé!</i> 5 1/2"x8 1/2" 454 pp. 1/2004	1-5 copies \$27	6-13 \$16	14-27 \$15	case <u>28</u> or more \$13.50
<i>One Nation, Under Surv.</i> 5 1/2"x8 1/2" 480 pp. 6/2009	1-5 copies \$27	6-13 \$16	14-27 \$15	case <u>28</u> or more \$13.50
<i>Hologram of Liberty</i> 5 1/2"x8 1/2" 360 pp. 5/2012	1-5 copies \$27	6-13 \$16	14-27 \$15	case <u>28</u> or more \$13.50
<i>Boston on Surviving Y2K</i> 5 1/2"x8 1/2" 352 pp. 11/1998	1-5 copies \$11	6-17 \$10	18-35 \$9	case of <u>36</u> or more \$8
<i>Safari Dreams</i> 5 1/2"x8 1/2" 352 pp. 1/2008	1-5 copies \$30	6-17 \$18	18-39 \$17	case of <u>36</u> or more \$15
<i>You & The Police!</i> 5 1/2"x8 1/2" 168 pp. 1/2009	1-5 copies \$16	6-37 \$10	38-75 \$9	case of <u>76</u> or more \$8
Mix titles for any quantity discount. This is easiest done as 1/4 case per title: 1/4 case of: BGB 4 MfM 7 ML! 7 ONUS 7 HoL 7 BoSY 9 SD 9 Y&P! 19				

Shipping and Handling are *not* included! Please add below:

non-case S&H within USA for (BGB MfM Molôn ONUS Hologram):

First Class (or UPS for larger orders) add: \$7 for first copy, \$2 each additional copy.

non-case S&H within USA for other titles (Y&P! BoSY Safari Dreams):

First Class (or UPS for larger orders) add: \$5 for first copy, \$1 each additional copy.

CASE orders (straight or mixed) UPS Ground: \$35 west of the Miss.; \$40 east.

Overpayment will be refunded in cash with order. Underpayment will delay order! If you have questions on discounts or S&H, please email us through our website.

These forms of payment only:

Cash (Preferred. Cash orders receive pre-signed copies when available.)

payee blank M.O.s (Which allows negotiability.)

silver 1oz. bullion (At today's spot price, found at: www.kitco.com)

Unless prior agreement has been made, *we do not accept and will return* checks, C.O.D.s, or any other form of tender. (Many of our distributors take credit cards.) Prices and terms are subject to change without notice (check our website first).

Please send paid orders to the address on www.javelinpress.com